John Carter Brown
Library
Brown University

# CHRYSAL;

OR THE

# Adventures of a Guinea.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of ſeveral ſtriking Scenes,

WITH

Curious and intereſting ANECDOTES of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, *and* PORTUGAL.

—— Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue her own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure,

SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

---

VOL. I.

---

LONDON:

Printed for T. BECKET, at Tully's Head, near Surry Street, in the Strand.

MDCCLX.

PUC

TO THE

Right Honourable

# WILLIAM PITT, Esq;

*&c. &c. &c.*

SIR,

THE Publisher of these papers is sensible, that the time devoted to the care of nations, is too valuable to be spared to the perusal of them, yet he should think himself guilty

of a breach of the general gratitude, which, at this time, ſwells every honeſt heart, in *Britain*, if he omitted to lay at your feet, a work, in which every occaſion of diſplaying the bleſſings of a good adminiſtration appears to have been ſought with pleaſure, and dwelt upon with judgment.

The genius of my author was evidently ſo averſe to adulation, that it would be doing him, the ſevereſt injuſtice, to join any thing to his work, which even envy could poſſibly pervert to ſuch a motive, by inſinuating, that the pictures he draws, in many places, of national good conduct, and the happy ſtate of it, are a panegyrick on preſent,

not

not a repreſentation of imaginary ſcenes.

A ſenſe of this precludes me from the pleaſure of illuſtrating his remarks with particular inſtances; but in return for that painful ſelf-denial, I muſt be indulged in a profeſſion of the joy, with which I (as muſt every *Briton* whoſe heart feels for his country) congratulate myſelf, on my happy fate, in living under an adminiſtration, in which the flights of imagination of a viſionary recluſe, dead ſo many years ago, may be taken for a relation of the real events of the preſent times.

Here my addreſs to Mr. Pitt muſt ſtop! But nothing can ever ſtop my prayers to Heaven for

the preſervation and happineſs of a life, on whoſe labours, the welfare, not only of this mighty empire, but alſo of the greater part of *Europe*, do now ſo eminently depend.

*A Briton.*

PREFACE

# PREFACE,

By the PUBLISHER.

TO acquit myſelf of the ſuſpicion of preſuming to aim at particular characters, in the following Work, ſhould any fancied likeneſs be thought to direct an application; as well as to do juſtice to the real author of it, I think it my duty to make known the manner by which it happened to come into my hands.

As I was walking one evening, laſt ſummer, along *White-Chapel*, I was obliged to take ſhelter from a ſhower of rain, in a cottage near the Turnpike. The family were at Breakfaſt, at their tea, and as the rain continued, I had leiſure to reflect on the advantages of commerce, which thus in a manner joins the oppoſite extremities of the earth, by bringing their products together: at the ſame time, that the variety in the equipage of the tea-table, or indeed ſtool, on which *there was nothing of a piece*, ſuggeſted a juſt ridicule on the vanity of luxury.

This laſt reflection was extended to all the purſuits of man, on the ſight of a piece of written paper, that ſerved inſtead of a plate, to hold their butter, —'Who knows (thought I) but the 'writer of this, beſtowed time and care 'upon it, and promiſed himſelf both 'profit and fame, in reward of his la-'bour?'

This

This thought prompted curioſity to look at the paper, which, by this time, was ſcraped quite clean. I therefore, after a few words of converſation, to introduce my requeſt, deſired leave to ſee it, which was readily granted, when I was ſurprized to find my conjectures, as I imagined, confirmed, by its appearing to be part of ſome regular work.

Curioſity had now a ſtronger motive, than idle gratification! I aſked where they had got that paper; and on their telling me, at the chandler's ſhop next door, though this diſcouraged me a good deal, I reſolved to purſue my enquiry, and went to the ſhop, as if for ſome ſnuff, which, as I expected, was given me on a piece of the ſame paper.

The rain ſtill giving me a pretence for delaying there, I entered into diſcourſe with the woman, and among other idle queſtions, aſked her where ſhe uſually got paper to wrap her wares in, to which ſhe anſwered, 'Some-

'times from the public offices, and 'ſometimes from the bookſellers and 'printers; and when ſhe was diſap-'pointed at thoſe places, ſhe was forced 'to buy brown paper, which was much 'dearer; though at preſent, ſhe made 'uſe of ſome old ſtuff, that had lain a 'great while, lumbering her garret, ha-'ving belonged to a lodger of her mo-'ther's, who died many years ago.'

I then changed the diſcourſe, for fear ſhe ſhould perceive my deſign; but preſently ſeeing her going to tear more, for ſomebody elſe that came in, I could not forbear any longer, but offered her brown paper for all the written paper ſhe had, *as that was moſt proper for ſome work I deſigned*, which ſhe readily agreed to, and ſold me her whole ſtock for eighteen-pence.

This adventure put an end to my walk, ſo I took the firſt coach that went by, and hurried home to examine my purchaſe, which I found to conſiſt of

a number of fragments, upon various ſubjects, whether originally left unfiniſhed, or torn thus in the chandler's ſhop, it was impoſſible to ſay: and among the reſt, the following work, which ſeemed to have undergone a different, though not much better fate, being blotted in many places, often paragraphs, and ſometimes whole pages being eraſed; and what was worſt, this havock was made in the moſt curious and entertaining part of the whole, the *philoſophy of the nature and agency of ſpirits.*

The oddity of this collection made me reſolve to try if I could learn any thing of the author, from the woman of the ſhop, where I had made my purchaſe; accordingly I called upon her, one evening, as if merely by accident, and ſending for a pint of wine, to ſet her tongue a going, I no ſooner hinted my deſire, than ſhe directly gave me the following account, which I ſhall repeat as nearly as poſſible, in her own

words, ſhortening it only of expletive exclamations and repetitions.

'My father (ſaid ſhe) dying young, 'and leaving his family but poorly, my 'mother took this ſhop to help her to 'bring up three children, of whom I, 'the eldeſt, was but five years old. The 'times being hard, ſhe was obliged to 'make every honeſt ſhift, and there-'fore took in lodgers, and among the 'reſt, an elderly man who rented the 'garret to ſleep in, and a little turret in 'the garden, which he fitted up for 'himſelf for a work-ſhop: but what 'buſineſs he followed ſhe never knew, 'as he let no body ſee him at work; 'nor did ſhe trouble herſelf to enquire, 'as he always paid her punctually: but 'ſhe imagined he was a ſmith of ſome 'ſort, from the quantities of charcoal 'he burned, and the conſtant blowing 'of his bellows.

'In this place he ſpent all his time, 'often not quitting it for whole days

'and

'and nights together, till hunger has 'forced him to crawl like a ſtarved rat, 'out of his hole, to get a bit of vic-'tuals.

'At firſt, my mother was uneaſy at 'this, and imagining he muſt be *out of 'his mind*, or troubled in conſcience, 'ſhe ſpoke about him to a worthy gen-'tleman, a clergyman, that lived in 'the neighbourhood; but he coming 'to ſee him at a time when he had a 'clean ſhirt on, and had eat his victuals 'and ſlept regularly for ſome time be-'fore, his diſcourſe was ſo ſenſible and 'pleaſant, that the doctor could not 'help telling him the cauſe of his viſit, 'as a joke, at my mother, to whom he 'ſaid, when he was going away, that 'ſo far from being mad, he believed 'her lodger was the beſt ſcholar in the 'whole pariſh.

'My mother's good-nature had like 'to have loſt her her lodger, for as ſoon 'as the doctor was gone, he gave her

'warning

'warning, but upon her promiſing ne-
'ver to be guilty of the like indiſcre-
'tion again, nor to trouble herſelf any
'farther about him, than juſt to give
'him what he ſhould call for, he con-
'ſented to ſtay.

'From that time he lived among us,
'as unnoticed as he could deſire, fol-
'lowing his buſineſs without diſtur-
'bance from any one, nor appearing to
'give himſelf the leaſt trouble about
'that of any other perſon living, ex-
'cept it was me, whom he taught to
'read, and ſaid he would make his
'heir. An unhappy heirſhip, I am
'ſure for me; for it hindered my mar-
'rying *Jack Twiſt* the rope-maker, who
'is now the toppingiſt man in all *Rad-*
'*cliff-highway*, and then offered to take
'me in my ſhift.

'But there's no help for that now!
'Luck is all! To be ſure we thought
'he muſt be ſome extraordinary man,
'for he never wanted money, and then

'we

'we uſed to hear him talking to him-
'ſelf ſometimes, as if all the world was
'his own, of *building colleges, and*
'*churches, and houſes, and altering St.*
'*Paul's*, and I do not know what great
'things; and one day in particular, I
'remember he ſaid, before us all, that
'before ſeven years, he would hire an
'army, that ſhould drive the *pope* and
'the *devil* (Lord bleſs us) out of *Rome*;
'for to be ſure, he would talk before
'us, as if we could not hear him, as
'we would alſo do any thing before
'him, as freely, as if he was a cat or a
'dog! Well as I was ſaying, it was
'no wonder, to be ſure, that ſuch ig-
'norant, poor folks, as we, ſhould
'think much of him, eſpecially after
'what the doctor ſaid, and accordingly
'build great hopes, upon his promiſes.

'He went on thus for near 20 years,
'no ſoul ever coming near him, nor he
'going out, above once or twice in a
'year, and then not ſtaying above an
'hour or two at a time.

At

‘ At length his health began to break ‘ very much, which made my mother ‘ often ſpeak to him, not to work ſo ‘ hard, for he had been with us ſo ‘ long, and was ſo quiet, and paid ſo ‘ honeſtly, that we all loved him, as if ‘ he was our father. But her advice ‘ was all to no purpoſe; he ſtill went ‘ on, bidding her not trouble herſelf, ‘ nor be afraid about him. But this ‘ did not ſatisfy her; and one day, ‘ when he had been locked up, from ‘ the morning before, without having ‘ any victuals, or going to bed, ſhe re- ‘ ſolved to break through his orders, ‘ and call him to dinner.

‘ When ſhe came to the turret, which ‘ he called his *laboratory*, ſhe tapped ‘ gently at the door, but receiving no ‘ anſwer, nor hearing any noiſe within, ‘ ſhe was ſo frighted, that ſhe called ‘ me, to fetch the kitchen poker, with ‘ which we made a ſhift to force it ‘ open, when we found the poor man

‘ ſtretched

'ſtretched at his length, upon the floor,
'to all appearance dead.

'This ſhocked us greatly; but we did
'not alarm the neighbours, as we ima-
'gined there were things of value
'there, that might be diſplaced or
'taken away in the confuſion: we
'therefore raiſed him up ourſelves, and
'after a little while, perceiving ſigns
'of life, carried him in, and laid him
'in our own bed, and pouring ſome
'drops into his mouth and noſe, at
'length brought him to himſelf; when
'his firſt care was to enquire for the
'key of the turret, and whether any
'one elſe had been there, or any thing
'in it ſtirred; our anſwers ſatisfying
'him, he ſeemed quite eaſy, and in a
'little time recovered, to all appear-
'ance, as well as ever.

'From this time, he changed his
'way of life a good deal; and though
'he was much in the turret, which
'we obſerved he ever after called his

'*ſtudy*,

'*ſtudy*, and not his *laboratory*, he never 'ſat up whole nights in it, as before, 'nor bought any more charcoal, nor 'even oil for his lamp, but went to 'bed orderly when we did.

'But this change came too late, 'for about ſix months after, we found 'him one morning dead in his bed; 'though he had been as cheary in the 'evening, as he had for a long time 'before.

'This was a great ſurprize and con-'cern to us! But what avails grief: 'we muſt all die, and he was a very 'old man. As ſoon as we were cer-'tain that he was dead, the firſt thing 'my mother and I did, was to go to 'the turret, impatient enough to take 'poſſeſſion of our heirſhip; where, 'Lord help our poor heads! what did 'we find? only a few great old books, 'and thoſe papers you got; the very 'bellows, and tools, and pots that we 'ſaw there before, being all gone, and

'no

'no more ſign of a work-ſhop to be 'ſeen, than if it was not the ſame 'place, we had been in, but ſix months 'before. What he could have done 'with his things, we could not ima-'gine, for we never obſerved him to 'carry them out, ſo that we concluded 'he muſt have burned them.

'This was a ſore diſappointment to 'me, not to mention the loſs to my 'mother, to whom he owed a quar-'ter's rent, beſide an account of near 'twenty ſhillings in the ſhop; and ſe-'ven ſhillings and two-pence half-pen-'ny, was all the money in his pocket, 'nor did we ever find one penny more 'after him, though we ſearched cloſe 'enough! — Well! patience is a re-'medy for all things, but death! We 'were forced to ſubmit; thought I 'cannot help grieving, when I think 'of it, to this day, eſpecially when I 'ſee *Peg Sprout*, the green-woman's 'daughter, from *Wapping*, that *Jack 'Twiſt* married out of diſpair, when I

're-

'refuſed him, ride by, in her chaiſe, 'like a lady; and it is now 30 years 'ago!—No! let me ſee! it will be ex-'actly 29 years come next Michael-'mas; I am ſure I have reaſon to re-'member it well, for my poor mother 'took it ſo to heart, that ſhe never 'held up her head after, till it finiſhed 'her, in about nine years; though I 'cannot ſay, but ſomething elſe might 'have helped, for ſhe took cruelly to 'drinking drams, though as ſhe began 'it, to comfort her, for this misfor-'tune, it was all owing to that; and 'poor ſiſter Bett, too'—

I was obliged to interrupt her here, by aſking her, what kind of a perſon he was, or ſhe would have gone on to give me the hiſtory of her whole family, to which ſhe anſwered thus, 'What 'ſort of a man? I'll tell you then: 'for I think I ſee him before my eyes, 'this minute. He was a tall thin man, 'above ſix foot high, and no thicker 'than a watchman's ſtaff, as I may ſay;

'then

‘ then his conſtant leaning over his
‘ work, bent his long back, like a bow,
‘ eſpecially as he had no belly to keep
‘ it up, for he lived almoſt upon no-
‘ thing, ſo that when he walked, the
‘ length of his legs, and his great ſtoop
‘ made him look as if he had no body
‘ at all. As for his face, it was as long
‘ as my arm, and not broader than the
‘ edge of my hand; his eyes were ſunk
‘ half a foot into his head, and always
‘ covered with ſpectacles: his noſe was
‘ hooked over his mouth, as his chin
‘ turned up an handful to meet that:
‘ and the conſtant toaſting, over the
‘ charcoal, had ſhriveled up his ſkin
‘ ſo, that his whole face looked, as if it
‘ was covered with ſcorched parchment.
‘ —His dreſs (for I never knew him
‘ have but one) was a black coat, with
‘ little buttons all over it; which being
‘ made for him, while he ſtood upright,
‘ now that he ſtooped ſo much, hung
‘ down to his ankles: a broad leather
‘ belt, that kept his coat about him; a
‘ cloak, which he hung upon his ſhoul-
‘ ders,

'ders, but was ſo worn, that it ſhewed
'his ſkeleton through every part of it;
'and an old high-crowned hat. In
'ſhort he had ſo little of the appearance
'of a creature of this world, in his
'looks or dreſs, that whenever he went
'out, in the day time, the mob all
'gathered about him, and hooted him
'home, juſt as the little birds do an
'owl; aud ſome of our wicked neigh-
'bours, when any accident has hap-
'pened, have often threatened to take
'him up, and *dip* him for a witch,
'though I am perſuaded, that was no-
'thing but wickedneſs and malice, and
'that he knew no more harm than a
'baby.'

My curioſity being thus ſatisfied as to the author, there was but one thing more, that I deſired to know, and that was, how thoſe papers came to have ſo many blots made in them, which by the difference of the ink, I could ſee was done long ſince the firſt writing, to which ſhe anſwered, that ſome time after

after the old man's death, her mother let his apartment to one that called himſelf a clergyman, and was a great ſcholar, and uſed to make almanacks, and other books; that he had looked over thoſe papers, and, ſhe believed, taken out ſuch as he liked, and done what he pleaſed with the reſt; for they ſet no regard on them; and particularly ſhe remembered to have heard him ſay, that he would make ſomething of one of them; but ſhe believed, he found it would not do, for he ſoon after left their houſe, and joining with thoſe methodiſts, that were juſt then come up, went away with them, preaching about the country.

I thought it but reaſonable to reward the good woman's expence of breath, with half a crown, and ſo took my leave, though with a ſecret reſolution, to give her half the profit, if there ariſes any, from the ſale of the books; not thinking that ſuch a purchaſe, as I had made from an ig-

ignorant woman, could give me a juſt title to the whole *heirſhip*, as ſhe called it, that had coſt her ſo dear, as the loſs of her old ſweet-heart *Jack Twiſt*.

This good-woman's account explained to me, in ſome meaſure, the nature of this work, from the circumſtances of the author, who, I could ſee, had been a ſchemer, who had waſted his whole fortune, in the ſearch, after the philoſopher's ſtone, and having his eyes at length opened to his folly, though too late to remedy it, yet was able to divert the grief of his diſappointment, by writing theſe papers, in ridicule of ſuch notions, and from the ſale of which he might alſo expect ſome relief to his wants.

How juſt this expectation might have been then, it is now very hard to ſay, in their preſent mutilated condition; or what could have moved any man, to make ſuch havock in them; without it was, that the orthodoxy of

the

the clergyman was offended at the author's notions, which he wanted judgment to see, were only a delicate ridicule, of those wild, idle dreams, which some men, who call themselves philosophers, have thought proper gravely to obtrude upon the world, as learning and knowledge.

But whatever the motive was, the loss is now irreparable, and has reduced the work to the appearance of a novel or romance, almost the whole philosophical part having been erased; for as to the personal application of any thing in it, to the present times, the least attention to this account of the authour, will shew the absurdity and injustice of such an attempt; as it was wrote so long ago, and by a person so little acquainted with the world, that all the stories in it must necessarily be the mere creatures of imagination.

For the manner in which they are published, I shall only say, that it is

ſtrictly agreeable to the faith of the text; not one, of the many alterations and interpolations, which were in another hand, being given; but wherever I could not clearly make out the very words of the author, I honeſtly omitted the whole, not thinking it allowable or juſt, to palm my own words or ſentiments upon the world, on the credit of another.

How ſcrupulous I have been, in this point, will appear to any one, who ſhall take the pains of conſulting the original manuſcript, which ſhall be depoſited in the publick library of one of the univerſities, as ſoon as the work is printed. The only liberty I have taken, being in a few notes in the margin.

CHRYSAL:

# CONTENTS.

## BOOK THE FIRST.

### CHAP. I.

*THE apparition of* CHRYSAL *to an* ADEPT, *in the very moment of* PROJECTION. *His account of himself, and the cause of his appearing to the authour.* Page 1

### CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL *gives an account of the person who dug up his body, in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and consciousness.* 7

### CHAP. III.

*The history of* TRAFFICK. *His father's advice to him; containing some general obser-*

*vations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to ensure success in it.* 12

## CHAP. IV.

*The history of* TRAFFICK *continued: His father's death. He continues in trade, and turns schemer. His various schemes end in his ruin. The rise and progress of his passion for* AMELIA. *The base abuse of her confidence, by which he cheated her of the greatest part of her fortune, and afterwards formed dishonourable designs against herself.* 21

## CHAP. V.

*Continued. He cheats* AMELIA *of the residue of her fortune, and marries another woman.* AMELIA *sues him at law, is cast, and goes for* JAMAICA. *He is ruined, and follows her.* 29

## CHAP. VI.

*Conclusion of the history of* TRAFFICK. *He arrives in* Jamaica, *where he learns that* AMELIA *had been taken by the* Spaniards. *He*

*He turns buccanier, and ravages the* Spaniſh *coaſts, where he finds* AMELIA. *Juſt as he is going to ſeize her, he is knocked down by her huſband, and taken priſoner. He is condemned to die. He ſues to* AMELIA *for mercy; ſhe rejects him with abhorrence. His puniſhment is changed from death to the mines.* 36

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *purſues the hiſtory of his adventures. He explains ſome difficulties in his own nature. He is offered at confeſſion to a prieſt. The confeſſion and creed of a native* PERUVIAN. *The pennance enjoyned him by a* Jeſuit. 46

CHAP. VIII.

*The holy father's tenderneſs to another penitent, who had raviſhed, murdered, and robbed his own brother's wife. He accepts the ſpoils as a recompence to the church. He hints a method of preventing the danger of his brother's reſentment, and diſmiſſes him with ghoſtly advice.* 54

# CONTENTS.

## CHAP. IX.

*The father's rage on hearing that his penitent had secreted some of the jewels. The officer is pursued by his brother to the convent, whither he flies for sanctuary. His reception from the father, and the terms of their reconciliation. The father sends away the judge in a fright. The officer is received into the society.* 60

## CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *changes his service, and embarks for* Europe *in an* English *man of war. The cause and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his passage. On his arrival in* England *he is sent by his master to settle some mistakes in the voyage.* 69

## CHAP XI.

*The good consequences of a right understanding between certain persons.* CHRYSAL's *reflections on his first seeing the publick offices in* London. *His master visitt a gentleman, who, in the vehemence of his rage against certain*

*certain abuſes, hits himſelf a violent ſlap on the face. The neceſſity of decency, and the methods of ſupporting it, inſtanced in the hiſtory of a pretty fellow.* 77

## CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL'*s maſter gives his friend ſome hints, that make him lower his note. An uncommon piece of generoſity returned more politely, than could be expected from the parties. An odd ſtory of an unfaſhionable ſteward. The ſucceſs of* CHRYSAL'*s mediation in favour of his late maſter.* 86

## CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *explains ſome farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country; and enters into the ſervice of a noble lord. The ſagacity of Mr.* Poundage, *and his addreſs in buſineſs.* 92

# CONTENTS.


## CHAP. XIV.

*The history of* Mr. Thomas Poundage. *His lordship goes to his appointment. An evening's entertainment in high life.* CHRYSAL *changes his service: his reflections on the ruling passion of the times.* 99

## CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL *represents the company in perspective. Anecdotes of some of the most remarkable persons of the party. A painter-general deceived by his own judgment and eminent taste for* VIRTU. 105

## CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the mysteries of polite life. Some sketches of the character of his next master, who gives him to an extraordinary person.* 112


CHAP.

CONTENTS


CHAP. XVII.

*The history and character of* CHRYSAL's *new master. His adventures at the coffee-house. The fun of a modern* GENIUS *retorted upon himself, by the grave rebuke of a testy veterane.* 117

CHAP. XVIII.

*Some further account of* CHRYSAL's *master. His conversation and engagements with two booksellers. Some of the secrets of the trade.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 125


BOOK

# CONTENTS

## BOOK THE SECOND.

### CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the gentleman of a general. Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of riſing in the world, and the happineſs of dependance. Influence of* CHRYSAL'S *maſter, with his curious manner of ſupporting it.* 135

### CHAP. II.

*The hiſtory of* Mr. WILLIAM. *Some odd circumſtances in his conduct accounted for. By a progreſſion equally polite and frugal,* CHRYSAL *comes from his poſſeſſion into that of a celebrated female.* 143

### CHAP. III.

*The manner in which* CHRYSAL'S *new miſtreſs received and took care of her friend. How ſhe*

*ſhe employed herſelf while he was aſleep. Her management of him next morning.* 150

## CHAP. IV.

*The hiſtory and character of* CHRYSAL*'s miſtreſs. She gives him to a noted matron. Some account of his new miſtreſs, and her manner of managing her family.* 157

## CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL*'s miſtreſs pays a viſit to the laſt place ſhe could have been ſuſpected for going to. She meets a young lady, with whom, by an artifice, ſhe goes home. Her ſchemes to enſnare the lady.* 162

## CHAP. VI.

*The hiſtory of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected perſon. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the houſe, and reſolves to puniſh the bawd.* 171

CHAP.

# CONTENTS.


## CHAP. VII.

*The address of* CHRYSAL*'s mistress, and civility of a constable. She arrives at the justice's, and is sifted and softened by his clerk, and terrified by his worship.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 179

## CHAP. VIII.

*She is discharged on proper bail. The labours of* CHRYSAL*'s new master, in the service of the public, with some of the various mysteries of his office.* 188

## CHAP. IX.

*An highway-man, improperly taken, saves his life, by losing his reason. Judicial sagacity, and eloquence triumphant over common-sense, and matter of fact. This mystery explained.* 195

## CHAP. X.

*An instance of his worship's exemplary justice on a shop-lifter. The unfashionable compassion*

*paſſion and generoſity of a ſailor. A diſpute about ſuperiority of ſkill between his worſhip and his clerk, opens new myſteries in the profeſſion.* 204

CHAP. XI.

*The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worſhip goes next morning to hear a charity-ſermon, and from thence to eat a charity-feaſt, where* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. Some account of the nature of a charity-feaſt.* 212

CHAP. XII.

*A repreſentation of the company. The hiſtory of one of the principal members. The modern method of bribing heaven with the wages of hell.* 218

CHAP. XIII.

*Continued: The hiſtory of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He converts a noted bawd, but diſappoints his*

*his deſigns, by too great confidence in his own ſkill. The character of a clergyman.* 227

## CHAP. XIV.

*The repreſentation concluded with an eminent man-midwife. His motives for taking up that profeſſion, with ſome unfortunate anecdotes of his practice.* 234

## CHAP. XV.

*Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themſelves. They fall out about the diviſion of the ſpoil. A terrible uproar is appeaſed by a demand of general concern. The conciſe manner of paſſing publick accounts.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 241

# CHRYSAL:

## OR THE

# ADVENTURES

## OF A

# GUINEA.

---

## CHAP. I.

*The Apparition of* CHRYSAL *to an* ADEPT, *in the very moment of projection. His account of himself, and the cause of his appearing to the author.*

ON a day, when long and strict abstinence had purified my body from every *terrene* incumbrance, and intense contemplation wound up my mind to an enthusiasm fit for *empyreal* conversation, as I stood with my eyes riveted on the *obstetrick* flame, in strong expectation of the birth of the *mystick child, the first-born of the morning*, ready

to ſeize the happy moment, *when the earth ſufficiently impregnated with the water, aſcendeth white and ſplendent, that I might compound the pure elements, before they fly from the fire, and ſo perfect the great work*; my eyes began to dazzle, and the power of imagination overwhelmed my ſoul.——I ſaw a blue effulgence break from the liquid gold, and play about the genial vaſe! — I was aſtoniſhed! I thought it the *ſubſtantial form of the ſon of the ſun!* I thought the happy moment was come, when *the roſe of the eaſt ſhould bloom in the deſart*, and mine the favoured hand to cultivate its growth! I indulged the pleaſing thought! I melted in the virtuous joy! and in obedience to the divine impulſe, I kneeled to receive the reward of all my labours, *the radiant crown of wiſdom and glory*, from the hand of nature, with every ſenſe and faculty ſuſpended, for fear of interrupting the myſterious proceſs.

As my ſoul hung in this extaſy, the flame which wrapped the *ſacred birth in the bed of purification*, aroſe with a glory too ſtrong for mortal ſenſe, and filled the room. My ſenſes ſunk under the preſſure, and I was diſſolved into a trance, when a voice, celeſtially harmonious, encouraged me to raiſe my eyes, and I beheld *the body of the effulgence condenſe into an incorporeal ſubſtance*

*in*

*in the form of a ſpirit*, while a placid ſhade ſoftened the fierceneſs of the radiance, and made it tolerable to human ſenſe.

An holy horror curdled all my blood; but the melody of the ſame voice, which had before emboldened me to look up, reaſſured my fainting heart with theſe words; "Son of pains and votary of ſcience! thy "unwearied perſeverance has prevailed, "and I am ſent to crown thee with the vir- "gin roſe! I am CHRYSAL, the ſpirit of "that incorruptible maſs now glowing in "that vaſe before thee, who in reward of "thy noble conſtancy in offering this thy "laſt mite, on the ſhrine of knowledge, "am come to reveal the myſteries of nature "to thee, and ſatisfy that raging thirſt for "wiſdom, which has ſo long excrutiated "thy ſoul, and thus emaciated thy body! "And that thou mayeſt the better compre- "hend the greatneſs of this honour vouch- "ſafed unto thee, I ſhall trace the opera- "tions of nature through her moſt ſecret "receſſes, and illuſtrate the truth of what I "ſay, by a detail of the various incidents "of my being, in my preſent ſtate, to "prepare thee for the reception and proper "uſe of that *grand ſecret*, which I ſhall af- "terwards communicate!

" I can ſee your thoughts; and will " anſwer every doubt which may ariſe in " your mind at the wonders of my rela- " tion, without the interruption of your " inquiries, as *awful ſilence is the eſſence of* " *my converſe*, the leaſt breach of which " puts an end to it for ever! liſten then in " mute attention, nor let a breath diſturb " the myſtick tale!"—

The works of nature are infinitely various, and her methods of operation inſcrutable to the curioſity of that vain intruder Reaſon, which has of late preſumed to pry into her ways, and to doubt, if not deny, the reality of all effects, which her ſhort-ſighted eye cannot trace to their cauſes! a preſumption that has juſtly ſhortened the line of human knowledge, and condenſed the miſt of ignorance which overſpreads the world! Some noble efforts though I ſee the nature of man preparing to make, to recover that eminence of conjecture and credulity which alone can merit ſuch a communication of extraordinary knowledge as is now indulged to you. Some of the moſt hidden truths which I ſhall here unfold, has unaſſiſted genius diſcovered already; and more ſhall curious penetration make learned gueſſes at, even in this ſceptick age *.

* See all the modern hypothetical philoſophy.

Know then, that in the economy of nature, to eaſe the trouble, and keep up the ſtate of its great authour, * a ſubordination of miniſterial ſpirits executes the ſyſtem of his government in all its degrees; one of whom, for the greater order and expedition, is made to actuate every divided particle of matter in this immenſe univerſe. In this diſtribution, *that* portion of gold was aſſigned to my charge, upon its firſt feeling the influence of the † etherial fire of the ſun, the general miniſter of the divine commands. This happened in *Peru*, where *that* body of which I then became the ſpirit, was torn from its peaceful bed 200 fathoms deep in the bowels of the earth.

I ſhall not deſcribe my ſurprize, at my firſt plunging into thoſe realms of darkneſs, nor ſhall I ſatisfy the curioſity I ſee riſing in you, whether that period was the beginning of my exiſtence, or whether I was, either as a puniſhment or reward for a paſt, or a preparation for a future life, thrown into

---

* Eſſay on Spirit.

† Siris.

—— Would not theſe, and many other paſſages of the ſame nature which ſupport the ſyſtems of thoſe celebrated works, almoſt tempt us to think, that the writers of them muſt have had a communication with this or ſome ſuch ſpirit, to come at knowledge ſo ſupernatural?

this. Theſe are myſteries not yet diſcovered, though often moſt learnedly gueſſed at. All I ſhall unfold to you are points already known, or ſuch as I ſee ready to be found out by human induſtry, as it would put an end to learning to make a revelation of the objects of its enquiries! ſuch matters, I ſay, I ſhall explain to you, and farther, relate ſome occurrences, the knowledge of which will be equally uſeful and entertaining, which happened to the ſeveral perſons with whom I have had intercouſe, in the various ſtages of my preſent ſtate.

And as you may be at a loſs, to know how I could arrive at the knowledge of ſuch facts, many of which happened long before my converſe with thoſe perſons, I ſhall inform you, that beſides that *intuitive knowledge* common to all ſpirits, we of ſuperior orders, who animate this univerſal monarch GOLD, have alſo a power of entering into the hearts of the immediate poſſeſſors of our bodies, and there reading all the ſecrets of their lives. And this will explain to you, the cauſe of that love of gold, which is ſo remarkable in all who poſſeſs any quantity of that metal. * For the operation of every material cauſe, is in proportion to

---

* Eſſay on Spirit.

the

the ſtrength of the ſpirit actuating that cauſe; as the ſtrength of the ſpirit is reciprocally in proportion to the quantity of his material body: and conſequently, when the mighty ſpirit of a large maſs of gold takes poſſeſſion of the human heart, it influences all its actions, and overpowers, or baniſhes, the weaker impulſe of thoſe immaterial, uneſſential notions called *virtues*. And this intuition, and power of tranſmigration I have thus explained, to remove every ſhadow of doubt of what I ſhall relate.

## CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL *gives an account of the perſon who dug up his body, in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and conſciouſneſs.*

THE firſt object that ſtruck me, when I darted on the power of a ſun-beam, into thoſe infernal regions where my body was juſt dug up, was the perſon in whoſe hands it was when I took poſſeſſion of it.

Dark as the gloom of ſuch a place muſt be, a melancholy, that doubled the horrors of it, ſat upon his brow. He gazed a moment on *me*, in ſilent grief, and then groaned out theſe words with a vehemence that ſeemed to burſt his heart: "Damned, "damned, pernicious, damning gold! "how dearly do I purchaſe this momen- "tary poſſeſſion of thee! But let me ac- "knowledge the juſtice of my fate! I "wiſhed only for gold, and now, this "equivocal grant of that wiſh, is the juſt "puniſhment of the folly, and the wick- "edneſs of it."—Grief here choaked his utterance! he could ſay no more, but ſobbed aloud, while all the dreary caverns echoed to his anguiſh.

Curioſity prompted me to learn the cauſe of his diſtreſs: I therefore immediately entered into his heart, to read the events of his life, which I doubted not but I ſhould find deeply imprinted there: but I was ſurprized to find that room in it, which, I could plainly ſee, had been poſſeſſed by the love of gold, ſo filled with ſenſe of pain, with grief, and remorſe, that I could ſcarce gain admiſſion.

Upon this I mounted into the *cenſorium* of his brain, to learn from the ſpirit of conſciouſneſs, which you call SELF, the

cauſe

cauſe of ſo uncommon a change, as it is contrary to the fundamental rules of our order, ever to give up an heart of which we once get poſſeſſion.

I found the ſpirit very buſy, though I thought ſomewhat odly employed: ſhe was running over a number of *niches*, or impreſſions, on the fibres of the brain, ſome of which I obſerved ſhe renewed with ſuch force, that ſhe almoſt effaced others, which ſhe paſſed over untouched, though interſperſed among them. The ſight of *me* ſeemed to ſuſpend her works a moment, but as if that pauſe was only to recover ſtrength, ſhe inſtantly renewed her labour with greater aſſiduity.

I *looked at her*, my deſire to know the meaning of what ſhe was doing, and to ſignify the cauſe of my viſit, to which ſhe returned me this anſwer in *a glance*, that interrupted not her work.

(I ſee you wonder, that I ſpeak of this ſpirit, though the SELF of a man, as if it was a female; but in this there is a myſtery; every ſpirit is of both ſexes, but as the female is the worthier with us, we take our denomination from that.)

You are ſurpriſed, (*looked ſhe*) to find me ſo earneſtly engaged, in work which you do not underſtand; but in this work

conſiſts my very eſſence. This place, where we are, is the ſeat of memory; and theſe traces, which you ſee me running over thus, are the impreſſions made on the brain by a communication of the impreſſions made on the ſenſes by external objects.——Theſe firſt impreſſions are called *ideas*, which are lodged in this repoſitory of the memory, in theſe marks, by running which over, I can raiſe the ſame *ideas*, when I pleaſe, which differ from their firſt appearance only in this, that, on their return, they come with the familiarity of a former acquaintance.

How this communication though is made, I cannot ſo well inform you; whether it is by the *oſcillation of the nervous fibres*, or by the *operation of a certain inviſible fluid*, called *animal ſpirits*, *on the nerves*; no more than I can explain to you, how my touching theſe marks, on this material ſubſtance the brain, can raiſe *ideas* in the immaterial mind, and with the addition of acquaintance beſide; for theſe are matters not quite fully ſettled among the learned.

All I know is, that the thing is agreed to be ſo by ſome, or other, or all of theſe means; and that my whole employment, and end of being, is to touch them over, and acknowledge their acquaintance thus; without my doing which, a man would no longer continue the ſame perſon, for in this

ac-

acquaintance, which is called *conſciouſneſs*, does all perſonal identity conſiſt.*

As for the work, I am juſt now particularly engaged in, you muſt know, that this man whom, as I am *his ſelf*, I ſhall henceforth, for conciſeneſs and perſpicuity, call *my ſelf*, was once poſſeſſed of, or in power of poſſeſſing, every real happineſs of life, till an inſatiable deſire of riches hurried him into meaſures which overturned all that happineſs, and in the end plunged him into this gulph of miſery.

The traces of that happineſs are thoſe which you ſee me paſs over without renewing; by which means he forgets that he was ever happy, except ſometimes, when the trace of any particular unhappineſs comes ſo near that of any inſtance of happineſs, as unavoidably to touch it; which touch, by the renewal of the idea of ſuch happineſs, only aggravates the ſenſe of the preſent want of it: And thus *I* make memory either a bleſſing or a curſe, according to the nature of the trace which *I* renew.

I ſee you are aſtoniſhed, how a perſon who was ever happy, could poſſibly fall into ſuch miſery as *I* am now in; but I ſhall remove that aſtoniſhment, by the hiſtory of *my* life, in which I ſhall accommodate

---

* Locke.

my

my accounts of places and things to the circumstances of my present state, without regard to the universality of *our* spiritual nature; and call them by their names among men, without the delay or trouble of description.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. III.

*The history of* TRAFFICK. *His father's advice to him; containing some general observations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to ensure success in it.*

MY name is *Traffick*; I was the only son of a wealthy merchant in *London*, who bred me to his own business. There was nothing remarkable in my youth, except that the characteristick passion of my heart, shewed itself, in the very dawn of reason, in my eagerness to engross and hoard up the bawbles of my play-mates, and the far-fetched schemes I laid to overreach them in all our little bargains.

My father was at first delighted with this cunning, which his fondness took for the first essays of a great genius; but, when he saw me persist in it after I grew up, and attempt to practise the same arts, in the course

courſe of my buſineſs, it gave him ſerious alarms for my future conduct; for he had ever been averſe to theſe artifices which are called the myſteries of commerce, and owed his ſucceſs ſolely to cloſe application, in the plain way of a fair trader.

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as timidity and want of genius, and, undiſcouraged by his conſtant repulſes to all my *bold ſtrokes* and deep ſchemes, which I was continually ſuggeſting to him, I reſolved, when I ſhould be at liberty, to indulge my own inclinations, to ſtrike out new ways, that ſhould afford me opportunities of exerting my abilities in their full ſtrength, and ſhewing them in their proper luſtre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form theſe deſigns, would ſo often break out in boaſting, that my father was fully acquainted with them; and a ſenſible decline in his health quickening his apprehenſions for me, his tenderneſs would omit nothing which might ſhew me my errour, in its proper light, and prevent my falling into ſo deſtructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his cloſet, one morning, he addreſſed me in theſe words; words which dear experience has now printed deeply on my heart, though then they had no weight with me.

" My ſon (ſaid he) the day approaches
" faſt, when you will be in poſſeſſion of the
" fruits of my honeſt induſtry. I leave
" you a good fortune; and I have the
" happineſs to be able to tell you, in this
" trying moment, that no wilful private
" wrong, or public fraud, makes me wiſh
" it were, by one penny, leſs.—As there-
" fore it was acquired in the fear of God,
" if not abuſed, it will wear with his bleſ-
" ſing. Habit had ſo wedded me to my
" buſineſs, that I could not leave it off
" myſelf; and I bred you to it, to in-
" dulge, as I thought, the bent of your
" genius, and to prevent idleneſs from
" tempting youth to folly.—But now, that
" dangerous ſeaſon is paſt with you; and
" the labour of my life has taken away all
" neceſſity of labour from yours. Be
" wiſe then, my ſon, and enjoy the happi-
" neſs which Heaven offers you, without
" tempting a reverſe! You will have
" riches, more than enough, for every
" natural want, for every rational wiſh;
" and it will ſweeten your enjoyment of
" them, and draw down the bleſſings of
" heaven on your head, to employ the
" ſuper-plus in acts of private benevolence,
" and public ſpirit; in which beſt of em-
" ployments, the abilities, with which you

" are

" are ſo liberally bleſſed, will find ample
" room for their exertion; and your pious
" endeavours be rewarded with a ſucceſs,
" that will be an happineſs to your life, and
" an honour to your name.

" As for the profeſſion of a merchant,
" to which you have been bred, heaven
" points it out to the inhabitants of this
" country, by our ſituation; nor can any
" other be more advantageous to it; but
" ſtill, even that advantage may be pur-
" ſued too far, and the extreme of induſtry
" may ſink into avarice, and ſo diſappoint
" its own end.

" For I muſt tell you, my ſon, that
" though trade adds to the wealth, yet too
" eager a purſuit of it, even with the great-
" eſt ſucceſs, diminiſhes the ſtrength of a
" nation. I am ſenſible, that this is
" againſt received opinion; but truth, when
" properly diſplayed, will force convic-
" tion.

" The real ſtrength of a nation conſiſts
" in the prevalence of diſintereſted ſpirit,
" which, regradleſs of *ſelf*, throws its
" weight into the public fund; as may be
" proved by many examples of ſmall, poor
" ſtates, conquering large wealthy ones.
" Whereas the ſpirit of commerce centers
" all in *ſelf*, diſcouraging and deſpiſing, as

" folly,

" folly, every thought which does not tend
" that way; and ſo breaking that unani-
" mity, which is the very eſſence of power,
" and only can give it ſucceſs.——A re-
" flection this, my ſon, which obſervation
" confirms too ſtrongly at preſent, and
" which ſeems to overcaſt the proſpect of
" this happy nation.

" My advice therefore to you is, to re-
" tire from buſineſs, though not to idle-
" neſs. You will have a fortune that will
" make you of conſequence in the ſtate,
" and give you ſufficient employment in the
" conduct of it, without embarraſſing your
" mind with anxiety for more. And, to
" to enable you to follow this advice with
" the greater eaſe, I have ſettled all my
" affairs, and ſhall leave you free from
" every entanglement of life. This is the
" advice, the requeſt of a fond father, who
" deſires compliance from his dear ſon, and
" would not force unwilling obedience, by
" any act of authority or command.——
" But ſhould the love of buſineſs have taken
" ſuch an hold of your heart, as habit gave
" it of mine, and not permit you to com-
" ply with this requeſt, take, my ſon, the
" advice of experience, and hold faſt the
" clue it offers, to guide you through the
" labyrinths of trade, in which the vivacity

" of

" of your genius may, otherwiſe, loſe its
" way. Nor are the rules, I ſhall hint to
" you, many to be remembered, or diffi-
" cult to be obſerved.

" *Be juſt, my ſon, in all your dealings;*
" *wrong not individuals, nor defraud the pub-*
" *lic.*

" Theſe are all the rules I recommend;
" but in them is comprized more than,
" perhaps, appears at firſt view. Do not,
" therefore, think them too obvious to have
" been neceſſary to be repeated! nor let
" the mention of them give offence, by any
" ſeeming implication of perſonal doubt.

" In the buſineſs of a merchant, theſe
" rules comprehend a great extent of mean-
" ing, though I ſhall mention but a few
" inſtances of it at preſent.

" As for the firſt, every miſrepreſenta-
" tion to miſlead ignorance, or abuſe cre-
" dulity, every taking advantage by ſupe-
" rior knowledge, is a wrong to the party
" ſo deceived, as every artifice to evade
" the intention of the legiſlature is a fraud
" againſt the public, nay, againſt your-
" ſelf, and every individual who claims
" the benefits provided by the ordinances,
" ſo defeated of their ſupport.

" This indeed is ſo obvious, that it were
" an affront to reaſon to inſiſt on any proof

" of

" of it. The moſt eager purſuer of illicit " trade will not vindicate a general indul- " gence of it; and if it is not lawful for all, " how can it be for him; or with what co- " lour can he claim a profit, which he is " conſcious ariſes only from deceit, and " from the benefit of thoſe very laws, which " it thus defeats.

" The temptations to this breach of ho- " neſty, I own, are many and great, and " ſome of them perhaps plauſible; par- " ticularly in thoſe branches of trade, " which ſeem to bear a more than equal " ſhare of the weight impoſed for general " advantage. But, in oppoſition to this, " it muſt be conſidered, that it is impoſſi- " ble to provide ſo exactly for a thing, of " ſo fluctuating a nature as trade, that the " ballance ſhall not incline, in ſome one " inſtance; and that it muſt, by the ſame " motion which oppreſſes one, be favour- " able to ſome other; and ſo preſerve the " equi-poiſe in the whole; and this ob- " viates the only ſhadow of an argument, " that can be brought in defence of this " too common practice.

" As for the former, of avoiding pri- " vate wrong, that is more difficult, and " leſs defenſible, if poſſible, than even " this. For where all the powers of the

" mind

" mind are turned to *make* advantage, it is
" very hard to refrain from *taking* it, where
" we ought not, and bringing the great
" buſineſs of life into common practice, in
" its minuteſt concerns.

" The man whoſe ſoul is on the ſtretch
" to take advantage, in a bargain for thou-
" ſands, on the *Exchange*, will be apt per-
" haps inſenſibly to overlook an errour
" that is not to his diſadvantage, in a
" tradeſman's bill, or to take no notice of
" a guinea given inſtead of a ſhilling in
" change at the tavern, though either is as
" great diſhoneſty as if he took them, in a
" manner puniſhable with death by the
" laws: not to mention the innumerable
" little inſtances of temptation to this kind
" of wrong, which occur in every moment's
" dealing. That we may avoid temptation,
" is one of the petitions of the divine prayer,
" and never more neceſſary to be offered
" up than in this profeſſion, whoſe con-
" ſtant practice opens innumerable inſtances
" of it upon us.

" In a word, my ſon, there are ſo many
" and ſo ſtrong arguments of this nature,
" to be given againſt all trade, that the
" general advantage of the common-wealth
" alone can, in any way, ſupport it againſt
" them. This therefore ſhould be written

" in

" in the deepeſt characters, on the heart of
" every merchant, *that he ſhould never let*
" *private intereſt tempt him to engage in any*
" *trade or ſcheme that can interfere with the*
" *publick intereſt, or is forbidden by the laws*
" *of his country.*——I ſhall ſay no more;
" nor burthen your mind with farther ad-
" vice. Obſerve this, and be happy."

I was obliged to hear him; but his words, at that time, made no more impreſſion on my mind, than the whiſtling of the winds, nor in the leaſt altered my intentions; though I felt no ſcruple in promiſing obedience, the breach of which could never be upbraided to me, as I could not think of practiſing it, before his death ſhould remove the only perſon who had ſuch an authority.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. IV.

*The history of* TRAFFICK *continued: His father's death. He continues in trade, and turns schemer. His various schemes end in his ruin. The rise and progress of his passion for* AMELIA. *The base abuse of her confidence, by which he cheated her of the greatest part of her fortune, and afterwards formed dishonourable designs against herself.*

THE opportunities which I had long panted for, arrived too soon: my father dying just after I was of age, and leaving me possessed of wealth sufficient for me to exercise my talents on, as I was not blessed with prudence to take his advice, and put it to its proper use, in rational enjoyment.

I was immediately a man of consequence, and that, not only in my own eyes. I made a figure *upon Change*; I signed among the foremost in the public subscriptions. But all this did not satisfy me. I sickened at the thought of having an equal, not only in wealth, the darling passion of my soul; but

alſo in the reputation of acquiring it by methods of my own *ſtriking out*, as I looked upon the known courſe of buſineſs as too ſlow for my advances, and too limited for my genius.

I therefore immediately became a SCHEMER, and entered into every project which my own brain could invent, or artful impoſition ſuggeſt to me, blindly, wilfully giving up the ſerenity of an open mind, for the vain appearance of myſterious conſequence and deſign; and making my fortune a prey to every ſharking *projector* who flattered my vanity with promiſes of ſucceſs, in the very attempts which had been his own ruin.

The perplexity in which this infatuation ſoon involved my affairs, far from opening my eyes, only ſet me upon deeper ſchemes. *Sporting* upon private adventures, *taking in* unwary confidence, *flinging* the fair trader, by eluding the reſtrictions of law, were now too ſmall a game for me: I was entangled, and muſt cut the *Gordian knot* by ſome bold ſtroke.

I therefore threw off all reſtraint, and entered into meaſures the moſt injurious to my country, which was then engaged in a juſt and extenſive war. I *inſured* the effects of its enemies, and of conſequence gave them

them information how to avoid its forces. I *carried on their trade* with other countries: I *ſupplied* them with proviſions from ours; and at length went ſo far, as to *lend, and procure them money* to ſupport the war againſt ourſelves.

But all my ſchemes met their juſt fate. Though I could give their ſhips information how to avoid our ſquadrons, yet they fell into the hands of *unſtationed* privateers. My ſubterfuges for carrying on their trade were ſeen through, and a ſtop put to them before I could receive the ſtipulated profit. The ſtores I bought for them were intercepted by our fleets, and, to conclude all, the enemy, by one ſtretch of arbitrary power, at the concluſion of a peace, cancelled all the debts of the war.

This finiſhed my ruin: I had not only lent them all my own fortune, but had alſo borrowed much more to ſupply them, on confidence in their promiſes, than I was now able to pay.

In this ſituation, the advice of my father returned full upon me, and aggravated my diſtreſs. But I had no time for reflection; the horrors of a jail ſtared me full in the face, which I had no way to avoid but by flight, the equivocalneſs of my character having made every honeſt man, who was able

able to aſſiſt me, afraid of being concerned with me.

I therefore immediately raiſed all the money I poſſibly could, and embarked ſecretly in a ſhip of my own, for *Jamaica*; Heaven, to make its juſtice the more ſignal, uſing my blackeſt guilt as a chain to draw me to the vengeance I deſerved.

I muſt ſtop here, and look back, to give you an account of an affair, which the precipitancy of my ruin prevented my mentioning in its proper order.

Much as ſuch a complicated ſcene as I have deſcribed, muſt have taken up my time and engroſſed my thoughts, I had ſtill found leiſure for guilt of another nature, though ultimately ſpringing from the ſame cauſe.

I have told you, that my father had acquired his own fortune by induſtry; but as the greateſt induſtry requires a foundation to work upon, his had been aſſiſted by the perſon to whom he ſerved his apprenticeſhip, who knowing his abilities, and confiding in his honeſty, upon the decline of his own health, eſtabliſhed him in partnerſhip with his only ſon, whom he thought too young to conduct ſo extenſive a buſineſs.

My

My father faithfully executed this great truſt, and continued the partnerſhip, till his obſervation of my unfortunate diſpoſition determined him to make me quit buſineſs; when it was diſſolved, without the leaſt breach in that real friendſhip which had ſo long ſubſiſted between them. Though I did not obey my father's deſire, and retire from buſineſs on his death, yet my vanity would not admit a thought of recommencing the partnerſhip, as it would have been but a curb on my favourite ſchemes, and have implied a want of aſſiſtance, which, in my own opinion, I was far above. On the contrary, I rather declined too cloſe a connection with him in buſineſs; as I feared he might have taken upon him to interpoſe his advice againſt any thing, which his *narrow fearful* temper might diſapprove in my *great* deſigns; but as I kept up every other appearance of regard, and even reſpect for him, this ſhyneſs was not obſerved, nor any coolneſs occaſioned by it, in the intercourſe of intimacy between us.

But for this conduct I had another motive, beſides regard for *him*. He had an only daughter, enriched with every beauty and virtue that could mark the favourite work of heaven: ſhe was about four years

younger than me, which difference of age had given me an opportunity of treating her with ſuch a fondneſs, from her very infancy, as raiſed a real love in her grateful heart, as her beauties did the ſtrongeſt one it was capable of feeling in mine. Our fathers had ſeen this growing attachment, with the greateſt pleaſure, from the beginning, and encouraged it between us, (our mothers both died in our infancy) joining in the general opinion, that the union which had always been between their families would be compleated by the intermarriage of their children: an opinion that was then my pride, and ſeemed a pleaſure to the young *Amelia*'s honeſt heart, that was above diſguiſe.

But my father's death, before ſhe was of an age to undertake the care of ſuch an awful ſtate, and a long illneſs of her father's after, during which her filial piety and love would not admit a thought of any thing that ſhould interfere with her tender regard for him, prevented my happineſs from being accompliſhed, while there was any obſtacle that could hinder my evil genius from defeating it.

At length, after languiſhing five years, her father died, without a moment's more

im-

immediate warning, having been on the Exchange that Day as uſual.

In the tumult of this loſs, I was ſent for; and no will being found, for he unhappily had not imagined his end ſo near, nor made any ſettlement of his affairs, in the confidence of our attachment, *Amelia* gave every thing into my hands, and requeſted me to make up all her father's accounts, and conclude her dealings with the world.

This happened juſt as my *ſcheming* had begun to embarraſs my affairs. My heart therefore, never proof to much temptation, yielded to ſuch an opportunity of recovering the loſſes of my folly at her expence, by *ſinking* the greateſt part of her fortune to my own uſe; never conſidering, that I might have the whole in a juſt and honourable way, enhaunced with the greater bleſſing of herſelf.

To accompliſh this deſign, and prepare her for what was to follow, I pretended to *Amelia*, that I found many difficulties in her father's affairs; and having ſecreted as much as I thought proper, and could with ſafety, and deſtroyed every memorial that might detect me, for all which her unbounded confidence gave ample opportunity, I at length gave her in an account, with the ſtrongeſt expreſſions of concern,

*to find that what I had long apprehended was too true, and her father's affairs in a very bad ſituation; that I had however, with great difficulty, got together ſomething above* 10,000*l. and was convinced, that this perplexity in his Affairs, was the occaſion of his long illneſs, and had not left him ſpirit enough to enquire into them, and make a will.*

This repreſentation had the effect I deſigned; *Amelia*'s confidence in me would not admit a thought of my deceiving her; as pride, too powerful in the pureſt human heart, prevented her revealing her circumſtances to any one elſe, who might have attempted to diſprove what I ſaid; though indeed it was ſcarce natural to ſuſpect me of a deceit, that, according to the opinion which then prevailed concerning *Amelia* and me, could only affect myſelf.

She, therefore, with an appearance of ſurprize rather than doubt, or even concern, acquieſced, and ſigned a receipt in full, deſiring me to deſtroy all her father's books and papers, as they could be of no farther Uſe to her.

This compleated my deſign, beyond a poſſibility of detection, and even raiſed a new one againſt the poor pittance I had left her, though it was not quite a fourth part of what was really her right: for I had

now

now thrown off all thoughts of marriage with one *ſo far beneath me in fortune, looking upon it as a reproach to my wiſdom and knowledge of the world, to make any bargain in which I ſhou'd not have the advantage:* for what I had ſo baſely defrauded her of, I conſidered merely as an acquiſition of my ſuperiour ſkill in buſineſs, and abſolutely my own, without any manner of obligation to the perſon from whom I had obtained it: not that I had loſt my *deſire* for her perſon, (the only degree of love my heart was capable of feeling) but the advantage I had it now in my hopes to obtain over her, made me look upon her as a ſure prey to my pleaſure.

## CHAP. V.

*Continued. He cheats* AMELIA *of the reſidue of her fortune, and marries another woman.* AMELIA *ſues him at law, is caſt, and goes for* JAMAICA. *He is ruined, and follows her.*

THOUGH my whole life was one countinued ſcene of villany, yet in all, there was a gradation, a regular de-

ſcent from bad to worſe; each ſucceſsful crime opening new opportunities and ſuggeſting ſchemes which never entered into my thoughts before.

This was exactly my caſe with regard to *Amelia*. While ſhe was in poſſeſſion of her whole fortune, the higheſt wiſh of my heart was to marry her; but no ſooner had an unhappy accident given me an opportunity of defrauding her of far the greateſt part of it, than that reſpectful love immediately ſunk into looſe deſire, and my ſucceſs in the former ſet my thoughts at work to accompliſh the gratification of the latter, on my own baſe terms.

To bring this deſign to perfection, it was neceſſary that I ſhould get her fortune entirely into my power; which I accordingly formed ſchemes to accompliſh without delay: for the ſucceſs of my former attempt, ſo far from ſatisfying my avarice, or raiſing any ſenſe of compaſſion in my breaſt, for her wrongs, had made me look upon herſelf, and all that belonged to her, as my property, which I was as impatient to poſſeſs as if it was detained from me by injuſtice.

I therefore took occaſion one day, when we were alone together, to drop ſome words of concern, at my not having immediately

mediately by me, a ſum of money to lay out on moſt advantagious terms, which had been that very morning propoſed to me.

She directly took the hint, and ſaid, her little fortune was ſtill in her hands, in the ſame bank-notes I had given her; and if the uſe of it, for any time, could be of advantage to me, ſhe ſhould feel a greater pleaſure in my taking it, than in any profit ſhe could make of it any other way.

This was juſt what I wiſhed; and though I could ſcarce refrain from laughing, at the eaſineſs with which ſhe took the bait, I would not accept of her offer but with this reſtriction, that I would conſider whether the terms propoſed to *me* might not ſuit *her*, and be more advantagious than the intereſt I could afford her if I ſhould make uſe of it myſelf. I ſaid this with an equivocal ſmile, which ſhe underſtood as I would have her, and immediately, with an aſſenting bluſh, put the notes into my hand, without requiring a receipt or any kind of acknowledgment for them.

Having thus gained that which I reckoned the better part of *Amelia*, and ſure, as I imagined, of herſelf, when neceſſity ſhould humble her to my deſigns, as I had her whole means even of ſubſiſtence in my

power, I directly reſolved to cloſe with an offer, ſome time before made me by a wealthy merchant, of a large fortune, with his daughter, whom I accordingly married a few days after I had got poſſeſſion of *Amelia*'s money.

I ſhall ſpare myſelf the pain of any farther deſcription of my wife, than that ſhe was the very reverſe of *Amelia*, in ſoul and body; and my marriage conſequently as unhappy as I juſtly deſerved.

But I comforted myſelf with hopes of happineſs in the enjoyment of *Amelia*, whom I looked upon as my own, and only deferred making my baſe propoſals to, till her reſentment at my marriage ſhould cool, and I could deviſe ſome plan of privacy to elude the vigilance of my wife. Not but I dreaded the firſt emotions of her anger, which I expected to break out in loud complaints. But I was miſtaken, in meaſuring her ſoul thus by my own. She ſcorned to complain; nor did I hear a word from her, to interrupt the riot of my wedding. A greatneſs of ſoul, ſo far above my comprehenſion, that I attributed it to fear of giving offence to one, in whoſe power ſhe muſt be ſenſible ſhe was.

But, at the end of the month, I was awoke from thoſe dreams, by a meſſage

from

from her, delivered by a relation of her's, to desire I should pay in her money to him, for which he would give me her receipt. As I was not prepared for this, I believe it threw me into a confusion too visible; but I soon recovered presence of mind enough to answer, that "I could not but be surprized at such a demand, as *Amelia* must be sensible, that I had paid her all the money of her's that was in my hands, for which I had her discharge in full.

The gentleman replied in astonishment, "Her discharge, Sir! that was when you "*settled* her affairs; but she says, that she, "since then, gave her whole fortune into "your hands, to lay out for her. And, "Sir, *my* cousin is known to be neither a "fool nor a liar; though I fear she has "suffered severely for her ill-placed con-"fidence". — "Perhaps she says so, Sir, "(said I) but I know nothing of the mat-"ter, and am not accountable for what "she says or you think, Sir; and I sup-"pose, if your cousin is not a fool, she "has not given her money without some-"thing to shew for it.—But you must ex-"cuse my talking any longer on so idle a "a subject; and so Sir, your servant."— The mine was now sprung, and I waited with impatience for the event. As to her

demand, I knew ſhe could never ſupport it, as there was no perſon preſent when ſhe gave me the notes; and I had negociated them in a manner, beyond all poſſibility of their being traced,

While I was hugging myſelf in this ſecurity, the friends of *Amelia* perſuaded her to bring a bill in Chancery againſt me, in which the whole affair was ſet forth without any exaggeration. But this I made light of, as I had *my lawyer* ready, under whoſe directions I ſwore ſuch an anſwer as ſet her charge entirely aſide.—Elate with this ſucceſs, I thought this the time to purſue my victory, and wrote her a letter, in which I attributed every thing in my conduct of late, that might have ſurprized her, to love, and deſpair of obtaining her by any other method; and offered her a ſettlement above the demand ſhe had made to me, if ſhe would conſent to my deſires. This I wrote in ſuch general terms, that my letter could not be brought in evidence againſt me, and the largeneſs of the offer was only to decoy her into a treaty, there being nothing farther from my thoughts than ever to make her independant of my pleaſure.

This inſult only added new fewel to her reſentment; and all the anſwer I received,

was

was by another bill; but this met the ſame fate, by the ſame methods, with the former.

After this, I heard no more of *Amelia* for ſome time: but what was my aſtoniſhment, when I was informed, that ſhe had ſold off her jewels, and other little effects, and was gone to a relation of her's, who lived in *Jamaica*. This broke all my deſigns; and deſpair of ever obtaining her awoke my love, and aggravated my remorſe for my ill uſage of her almoſt to madneſs.

From this time the hand of heaven ſeemed to be upon me; every thing I had any concern in miſcarried; and to haſten on my ruin, my houſe was a perfect ſink of riot and debauchery: my wife, as ſhe had no charms to excite deſire, in a manner publickly purchaſing the gratification of her luſts at the moſt extravagant expence, and living in a profuſion that muſt deſtroy even a royal fortune.

Mine, great as it had been, ſunk under ſo many diſſipations of all kinds; and I had no reſource left as I ſaid before, but in precipitate flight, which heaven made my paſſion for *Amelia* direct to *Jamaica*, to mark the juſtice of its vengence the more plainly.

## CHAP. VI.

*Concluſion of the hiſtory of* TRAFFICK. *He arrives in* Jamaica, *where he learns that* AMELIA *had been taken by the* Spaniards. *He turns buccanier, and ravages the* Spaniſh *coaſts, where he finds* AMELIA. *Juſt as he is going to ſeize her; he is knocked down by her huſband, and taken priſoner. He is condemned to die. He ſues to* AMELIA *for mercy; ſhe rejects him with abhorrence. His puniſhment is changed from death to the Mines.*

I Had hitherto varniſhed over my villanies with hypocriſy, and ſtrove to preſerve ſome appearance, at leaſt, of virtue. But this was a reſtraint no longer poſſible, nor indeed profitable to me now, when my flight took off the veil, and alarmed all mankind againſt me; ſo that mine was really a ſtate of war with all the world.

On my arrival in *Jamaica*, I had the addition to my grief to find, that *Amelia* had been taken in her paſſage thither by a *Spaniſh* privateer: for ſhe had left *England* ſome time

time before the concluſion of the peace had compleated my ruin.

This drove me to deſpair: I was wearied of life; but reſolved not to die unrevenged on thoſe who had thus, as I thought, robbed me of my hopes; never reflecting on the improbability of her hearkening to my ſuit.

Burning with this project, I fitted out my ſhip, and manned her with a crew as deſperate as myſelf; reſolving, though the war was at an end, to purſue my revenge upon the *Spaniards* on the defenceleſs coaſts of their *American* dominions, in which my other paſſions were urged to haſte, by fear of my creditors, the news of my failing having come to *Jamaica* almoſt as ſoon as myſelf.

We therefore ſet out upon our cruiſe, or rather piracy, without delay, of which I ſhall not raiſe your horror with any further particulars, than that we went directly into the *Spaniſh Main*, where we not only rifled all the ſhips we met, but alſo made deſcents on the coaſts, and ravaged with a barbarity that was a reproach to human nature.

The tumult and hurry of this life kept my ſpirits in an agitation, that gave a kind of reſpite to my grief; and the ſpoil we made in our firſt enterprizes was ſo great,

as

as to awake hopes of reſtoring my affairs, ſo as to enable me to return to *England* with all the credit wealth could give.

And could I have known when to ſtop, I was ſoon rich even beyond my moſt ſanguine hopes: But urged by avarice, and encouraged by ſucceſs, I ſtill went on headlong to my fate, which I met in an attempt upon a Town, ſome way up in the country, the convenience and pleaſantneſs of whoſe Situation had made it the reſidence of the richeſt families in the whole province; as its diſtance from the coaſt made them live in a ſtate of perfect ſecurity, without any fortification or guard.

To this place we directed our march, one evening, and arrived at it a little after midnight, with an intention to ſurprize the inhabitants, and return to our ſhip with the ſpoil, before the country could riſe to intercept us.

The firſt part of our Deſign ſucceeded, and we got poſſeſſion of the town without any reſiſtance; where we committed all the outrages, and roamed about with the licentious careleſneſs of free-booters, under no command.

While every one thus prowled about for prey, fate goaded me to an arbour in a garden, whither I followed the cries of women.

I was juſt ruſhing in among them, inflamed with brutal deſire, when—what was my aſtoniſhment to ſee *Amelia*, in the moſt magnificent undreſs, throwing heaps of gold and jewels into a vault that opened by a trap-door into the arbour. I ſtood motionleſs at the ſight for ſome moments, in diſtruſt of my ſenſes, but two ſuch objects as ſhe and her riches, ſoon woke me from my trance, and I advanced to take poſſeſſion of both, reſolving not to diſcover myſelf till a more proper time; the ſtrangeneſs of my dreſs, that was deſigned to ſtrike horror, and the blood which, from ſcenes of cruelty and murder juſt committed, ſtill reeked upon my hands and face, making it impoſſible that ſhe ſhould know me.

At the ſight of me, the women all ſhrieked, and *Amelia*, as I advanced to lay hold on her, fell into a ſwoon. This embarraſſed me greatly, as I had no time to loſe, for our centinels juſt then ſounded a retreat. However, I thought I would wait a little, to ſee if ſhe recovered, and ſtooping to raiſe her, to give her air, I received ſuch a blow from behind, as deprived me of all ſenſe for ſeveral hours; when, on my recovering, I found myſelf chained on the ground in a dungeon.

I was ſome time before I could believe my ſenſes, or conceive where I was: but I ſoon found my fate, when the jailor coming to ſee if I was alive, gave me to underſtand, that my companions had gone off without me, and left me in the hands of a nobleman, who had himſelf knocked me down, as I was going to commit a rape upon his lady, while ſhe lay in a ſwoon; and that I had been thrown into this dungeon, that if I recovered, I might ſuffer the puniſhment due to the outrages we had committed both here, and in ſeveral other places of their dominions.

I wanted no further information to ſhew me the horrors of my ſituation. I ſaw them all, and aggravated an hundred fold, by the accuſations of my own conſcience, that could now trace the hand of Heaven in the juſtice of my puniſhment, which had thus overtaken me, in the preſence, and on the account of *Amelia*.—I wiſhed for death, as my only relief, and determined to ſeek it: But, alas! my reſolution failed me; and I feared to die. In this miſery I was dragged before a magiſtrate, who, enumerating the crimes we had been guilty of, condemned me to immediate death.—This ſentence, ſo much milder than my fears, awoke an hope of farther mercy, to obtain which, my evil

genius

genius ſuggeſted it to me, to apply to *Amelia*, abſurdly flattering myſelf, that ſome ſparks of her love for me might yet remain alive, or at leaſt, her goodneſs take delight in ſhewing itſelf ſuperior to my ill-treatment. Baſe hope, that met its juſt reward!

I therefore waved attempting a defence of other crimes, as I was conſcious, that I could not make any, but aſſerted my innocence, as to the particular charge of a baſe deſign upon *Amelia*, at the time I was taken, adding, that "I had the honour of "being nearly related to that lady, and "that, if I was indulged with a few words "with her, in the preſence of all there, I "hoped I might be found to merit a miti-"gation of my ſentence."

On my mentioning the name of *Amelia*, I obſerved one of the principal perſons in the court, whom I ſoon underſtood to be her huſband, kindle into rage. He did not however interrupt me; but as ſoon as I had concluded, he ſtarted up, and exclaimed with the moſt furious indignation: Amelia *thy relation! No more than angels are related to devils, by ſpringing from the ſame Creator! Her virtues are diſhonoured by the claim! But ſhe ſhall appear and diſprove the odious calumny!*—Saying which words, he inſtantly went for her, while an hollow

murmur

murmur of ſurprize and deteſtation made the ſilence of the court the more dreadful, and heightened the horrors of my ſuſpence.

But I waited not long; *Amelia* ſoon appeared, led in by her huſband, and being ſeated by the judge, "Where (ſaid ſhe, "looking round with the ſerenity of con-"ſcious virtue) Where is the perſon who "ſays he is related to me?"

The ſight of her threw me into ſuch a conflict of paſſions, that, without reflecting where I was, or how neceſſary it might be for me to raiſe her compaſſion by ſome moving addreſs, that might ſoften the ſeverity of her reſentment for my former treatment of her, as well as aſſure her of my innocence of any baſe deſign againſt her perſon, in the condition ſhe was in when I was taken, I could not forbear crying out in *Engliſh*, for I had ſpoken before in *Spaniſh*, in which I expreſſed myſelf but badly. O, Amelia! *haſt thou then forgot me?*

At the ſound of my voice, ſhe ſtarted, and looking earneſtly at me for a moment, fell upon her knees, and lifting her hands and eyes to Heaven, ſhe ſaid aloud in *Spaniſh*, "O God, how ſignal is thy juſtice! "Let me, let all the world acknowledge "and adore it!"—And then riſing, and

turning

turning to her huſband, who ſtood in amazement; 'This, my lord (ſaid ſhe) 'this is the man of whom I have informed 'you: This is that *Traffick* whoſe baſe 'diſhoneſty obliged me to leave my native country; and ſo, by that providence 'which is able to turn the greateſt misfortune into a bleſſing, was made the cauſe 'of my preſent happineſs with you. I abjure all kindred with him; I deſire he 'may be examined as to my ſtory; and if 'he can vary in the leaſt from what *I* have 'told you, let me be condemned to the 'ſevereſt puniſhment, but that of ſtaying 'longer in his ſight, or ever ſeeing his 'face more.'

On this ſhe withdrew, without deigning a look at me: But her words had a proper effect upon my heart, and I reſolved to do her juſtice. I therefore prevented her huſband's command, and, in as few words as poſſible, related the black affair with the ſtricteſt truth. When I had concluded, her lord declared, that I had not only confirmed every thing ſhe had told him, but alſo added many circumſtances of my own guilt, which ſhe had omitted, or perhaps not known.

So complicated guilt ſeemed to require conſideration to find out proper puniſhment,

ſo

ſo I was remanded to my dungeon, but without the leaſt encouragement to hope. The next day I was again brought into the court, where my former ſentence was changed into that of being broke alive upon the wheel; and this ſeverity was ſaid to be in juſtice to *Amelia*.

When I had ſtood ſome moments ſtupified with fear, the judge addreſſed me again in theſe words: 'Thou haſt heard, O 'wretched man, the ſentence due to thy 'crimes; but great as they have been, 'mercy extends her hand to thee. The 'virtues of the illuſtrious *Donna Amelia* 'over-ballance thy guilt, and have pre-'vailed for a mitigation of thy puniſh-'ment, in gratitude to that divine provi-'dence which made thee the cauſe of her 'coming among us. Thou ſhalt not die, 'becauſe we would not kill thy ſoul, before 'thou haſt had time to repent of thy 'crimes; nor ſhalt thou ſuffer torture, that 'thy ſtrength may not be impaired for the 'labour to which thy life is doomed; for 'this is the laſt day that thou ſhalt ever be-'hold the light of heaven: Thou ſhalt 'immediately deſcend into the mines, there 'to work out the reſidue of thy unhappy 'days, in raiſing that Gold for the uſe of

'others,

'others, the insatiable desire of which was 'the cause of all thy guilt.'

I would have spoken, in the agony of my soul, to desire death; but I was stopped by the judge, who sternly said, that to hear a word from me would be an insult upon justice. On his saying which, I was hurried away to the mountains over us, and precipitated into this gulph, where I have now been near.———

Just as he said this, I was obliged to fly away to my body, which the unhappy *Traffick* had thrown from his Hand, into the vessel in which it was to be raised from the Mine.

The length of this story will make you wonder, when I tell you, that the spirit of *Traffick shewed* it to me in a moment, for no longer did the gold remain in his possession; and I am always obliged to attend my body whenever it changes its master. But to understand this, you must be informed, that *we* spirits do not distinguish our existence by Time, or a succession of parts, as men do; with us, there is nothing past or to come, but every thing is present in one view, so far as the natural course of causes and effects is preserved free from interruption by superior power.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *purſues the hiſtory of his adventures. He explains ſome difficulties in his own nature. He is offered at confeſſion to a prieſt. The confeſſion and creed of a native* PERUVIAN. *The pennance enjoined him by a* Jeſuit.

THERE is no crime, however black in its own nature, that does not receive an aggravation from hypocriſy; but the higheſt exertion of this vice is, when it makes a pretext of the beſt inſtitutions, to promote the practice of the worſt actions. Of this I have ſeen innumerable inſtances, in the adventures of my preſent ſtate; though none ſo flagrant as what I ſhall now relate.

You may imagine I felt pleaſure at emerging from that infernal abyſs into light. There was nothing remarkable in the three or four firſt ſtages I went through, my temporary owners being only the refiners and other tradeſmen, who purified me from mixtures of mineral droſs.

I *ſee* you are deſirous to know how I could preſerve my identity, when melted down with large quantities of the ſame metal. But you muſt know, that ſpirits have a power of expanding or contracting themſelves into what dimenſions they pleaſe; and that their life is not confined to any particular parts, as the heart, or head, as in man, but is diffuſed through their whole bodies, ſo that any part being ſeparated from the reſt, does not die, but that portion of ſpirit which was in it, at the time of ſuch ſeparation, ſerves as a life for it, and becomes a diſtinct ſpirit, to inform that diſtinct body, and ſo on, *ad infinitum*: For as it is agreed upon, that bodies can be infinitely divided, upon the ſame principles ſpirit muſt alſo: for it would be moſt abſurd and impious to deny of the ſuperiour, any perfection which we attribute to the inferiour.——The enlarging of my body, therefore, by the addition of more matter, or the leſſening it by ever ſo many diviſions, makes no alteration in my *ſameneſs*, ſo long as my conſciouſneſs remains: The former only encreaſing my energy, by the acceſſion of ſo much ſpirit as informed the additional matter, for we ſpirits embody ourſelves entirely in commixtion, and reſolve into one;

as

as the latter ſeparates us again into diſtinct beings, to animate our ſeparated bodies.

The firſt abſolute owner to whom I belonged, was a native *Peruvian*, who had found means to purloin a conſiderable quantity of gold, part of which I was, and who preſented me, as a peace-offering, to an eccleſiaſtick at confeſſion.

I *ſee* you have a curioſity to know my ſentiments on religious matters; but I have told you before, that I am not allowed to make revelations. Sufficient on this head have been already made to man, did not his perverſeneſs diſtort them from their original perſpicuity and perfection.

As there was ſomething in the tranſactions which paſſed, when I was offered to this eccleſiaſtick, that may be new to you, I ſhall repeat ſome particulars of them.

You muſt have heard of the authority of the clergy, in all the countries which profeſs the religion of the *Roman pontiff*, and particularly thoſe under the *Spaniſh* monarchy. Of all the ſeveral orders which compoſe this political *hierarchy*, thoſe who call themſelves THE COMPANIONS OF THEIR GOD, have acquired the greateſt power.

Though this title may appear profanely great to you, yet they ſeem to ſupport it by

by the ſhare which they aſſume, in ſome of his moſt ſacred prerogatives.

To a reverend father, of this order, was I preſented, on the feſtival called *Eaſter*. He was ſeated in a retired chamber of his temple, in the exerciſe of one of the functions of the deity, *hearing, and puniſhing, or forgiving ſins*, according to his ſovereign pleaſure. It is not poſſible to give you *here* an idea of the ſolemnity of this ceremony, in a country where all religion is evaporated into ſhew. Be it ſufficient to ſay, that the pageantry was ſuch a mockery of the deity, as no other of his creatures, but *man*, would dare to commit.—The man who brought me into this myſterious fane, advanced with fear and trembling to the *apparent deity* of the place, and kneeling before him, confeſſed himſelf guilty of ſeveral heinous crimes, in the admiſſion of involuntary thoughts, and indulgence of the appetites of nature, contrary to the rules laid down for him by his ſpiritual guide.—But this will be beſt explained by inſtances. The firſt crime which the penitent revealed, was having taſted a morſel of fleſh on a day, when it was prohibited. The father, with a ſevere frown told him, ‘ that was a great ‘ ſin, which he muſt attone for, by work- ‘ ing two days for the church, without hire,

'and abſtaining from fleſh, at the ſame
'time, though it was generally allowed.'

He next confeſſed, that he had beaten a dog belonging to a prieſt, which had broke into his hut, and eaten the pottage prepared for him, by which means he had been obliged to go to ſleep without his ſupper. At this, the prieſt knitting his brow into tenfold auſterity, exclaimed, 'this is 'rebellion! rebellion againſt your God! 'Do you not know, that the dog of an ec-'cleſiaſtick, is above the greateſt (even 'white) layman, much more a wicked 'native! you muſt make amends!—you 'muſt!—or'——The tone and geſture with which he ſpoke theſe words, ſo terrified the trembling wretch, that he inſtantly put his hand into his boſom, and pulling *me* out, preſented me, to make his peace. As ſoon as *I* appeared, the prieſt's features ſoftened, the tone of his voice fell, and receiving me, with a gracious ſmile, 'You 'have not ſaid (ſays he) that the maſter of 'the dog was a Jeſuit! thy crime, there-'fore, though great, may be forgiven! 'but beware for the future, and remember, 'that the world, and all in it, belongs to 'us; and that to be guilty of the leaſt diſ-'obedience, even in thought, is treaſon, 'and deſerves the ſevereſt pun ſhment.

'Proceed!

'Proceed! unburthen your conſcience! I 'know your thoughts, but would have 'you ſpeak them, that I may prove your 'ſincerity. Proceed! I am in haſte!'

The penitent then went on—'O father, 'be merciful, and I will confeſs all! Re-'turning from my labour one evening late, 'I found my door faſtened, and no one 'anſwering when I called, I burſt it in, 'when behold, I ſaw father *Ignatius* in the 'very act of carnality with my beloved 'wife *Mootaw!* I was amazed! and though 'fear prevented my ſtriking him, I could 'not forbear thinking in my heart, that 'he who does thoſe things, can be no 'god, he muſt be only *man*; and I curſed 'him in the bitterneſs of my ſoul; but he 'was drunk with wine, and did not hear 'me.'

'Wretch! devil! heretick! (exclaimed 'the father in a rage) thou intrude upon 'the privacy of a *Jeſuit!* thou ſay, he was 'but a *man!* thou *think*, he could not know 'thy very thoughts, becauſe he had drank 'wine! audacious ſlave! Art not thou, 'and thy wife his? had he not a right to 'to uſe his own? was it not an honour to 'thee, ungrateful wretch? and dareſt thou 'to *think a Jeſuit is but a man?* But it 'is enough; the inquiſition ſhall teach

‘ thee faith and obedience; the inquiſition
‘ ——’

At that tremendous word, the wretch, half dead with fear, fell at his feet, crying out, ‘ O father, O God, O king, forgive, ‘ forgive! (and pulling out of his boſom ‘ the reſt of his gold) take this, O lord, ‘ from your poor ſlave, and forgive.—Take ‘ this, which I got at the peril of my life, ‘ and ſaved to buy the liberty of my dear ‘ child, whom my maſter took from me; ‘ take it, and forgive; let her ſtill be a ‘ ſlave; let me never ſee her more! But ‘ O the inquiſition! O forgive, forgive!’

The prieſt, mollified at the ſight of the gold, replied, ‘ Thou knoweſt my com- ‘ paſſion, but thou abuſeſt it, and thy ‘ crimes are almoſt too great for mercy. ‘ In hope thou wilt amend, and tranſgreſs ‘ ſo no more, I will forgive thee now: but ‘ thou muſt be puniſhed: Haſt thou no ‘ more gold?’—‘ O, father, no more, no ‘ more! and this I ſaved to redeem my ‘ dear child: O let me get my child!’ ‘ —*What! inſolent! doſt thou preſume to ca-* ‘ *pitulate? thou ſhalt be puniſhed: Inſtead of* ‘ *getting back thy daughter, thou ſhalt bring* ‘ *me thy ſon, whom I ſaw yeſterday, when I* ‘ *bade thee come to confeſſion. The boy I bleſ-* ‘ *ſed, and kiſſed upon my knee.*’—‘ O father, ‘ father,

'father, take all the gold, and let my 'daughter remain: But ſpare my ſon; he 'is too young, O father, too young for 'thee.'—'*The inquiſition!*'—'O take him, 'father, take him, take all, but ſpare me; 'I fly to bring my child to thee; O ſpare 'me from the inquiſition!'—'*'Tis well*; '*be comforted*; *thy ſins ſhall be forgiven*; '*perhaps, if thou behaveſt well, thy ſon may* '*alſo be reſtored. I fear thou haſt forgotten* '*thy Chriſtian faith*; *let me hear thee repeat* '*thy creed.*'—The man, ſomewhat reaſſured, to hear that he ſhould eſcape the inquiſition, and comforted with the hope of having his ſon reſtored, began thus——'I believe 'that God made the world, and all things 'in it, for my lords THE JESUITS; and 'that I muſt worſhip him, by obeying 'them, and ſaying the prayers they direct 'me, to the ſaints, and the bleſſed virgin, 'the mother of God, and above all, to 'the great ſaint IGNATIUS LOYOLA. But 'if I diſobey their commands in any thing, 'or repine at their ſervice, or think, that I 'muſt obey the *viceroy* before them, I ſhall 'be burned to death in the inquiſition *here*, 'and the great devil will burn me for 'ever, after I am dead.'—'Well, ſon, '*remember and practiſe thy creed, and thy ſins*

*'shall be forgiven thee: Go and bring the boy 'when it is dark.'*

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. VIII.

*The holy father's tenderneſs to another penitent, who had raviſhed, murdered, and robbed his own brother's wife. He accepts the ſpoils as a recompence to the church. He hints a method of preventing the danger of his brother's reſentment, and diſmiſſes him with ghoſtly advice.*

THE ſeverity with which the Jeſuit required ſatisfaction for the imaginary faults of the poor *Peruvian*, may, perhaps, lead you to think, that his zeal would be inexorable to real crimes; but the following account will ſhew you, that it was no ſuch thing, and that he looked upon nothing as a crime, which was not detrimental to the power, or temporal intereſt, of his ſociety.—The next penitent who approached the *mercy-ſeat*, was a commander in the army. He advanced with a military intrepidity, and kneeling down in form, Father (ſaid he) I have a long reckoning to make, and ſome of the articles are rather heavy.

heavy. My ſon (replied the prieſt) you have had experience of the indulgence of the church, and that no crimes are too black for her mercy, on *proper* penitence. Proceed then, and open your wounds to your phyſician; nor fear the efficacy of his medicines.

'You know then, Father (ſaid the penitent) that I have long burned with a paſſion for the wife of my brother the judge. It was the ſubject of my laſt confeſſion.'—'I remember it right well (replied the father) and you may remember alſo what ghoſtly, yet comfortable advice I gave you, to ſtrive againſt and ſuppreſs it, if you could.'—'True, father; but I told you then, that I knew it would be in vain for me to ſtrive, as I was reſolved to enjoy her, though at the hazard of my life.'—'But, ſon, did I not comfort you, by ſaying, that if you found it in vain to ſtrive, and could not live without her, as life was the greateſt good, in this world, it was juſt that you ſhould preſerve yours, by obtaining what you were ſo violently ſet upon, but always to be careful that you conducted matters ſo, as not to give offence by your ſucceſs.'—'Ah! but father, that was not in my power: She was deaf to all my entreaties; and that threw

'me into ſuch deſpair, that, not able to wait
'any longer, I have this very morning had
'recourſe to force.'—'That was really bad,
'if it could have been avoided; but, as
'you would not have forced her, if ſhe
'would have complied willingly, that al-
'ters the caſe very much in your favour,
'and perhaps ſhe put you to that trouble,
'only to ſave the appearance of her own
'virtue, and if ſo, you have both acted
'right, and there is no harm done, pro-
'vided the affair is not diſcloſed.'

'O, father, that is the thing; I was
'afraid of that; and as her huſband had
'always been a father to me, and all my
'future hopes depended on him, I ſo
'greatly dreaded her telling him, that, to
'prevent it, as ſoon as I had enjoyed her,
'I cut her throat.'

'Murder! O fie; it is an heinous crime:
'blood calls for blood: your caſe is terri-
'ble.'—'I feared ſo, father; but I de-
'pended on your tenderneſs; and as I did
'not think it reaſonable, that I ſhould
'have all the pleaſure of the crime, and
'you only the trouble of forgiving, I
'I ſtripped her of *theſe* jewels, which give
'me leave to offer you.'

'You are a prudent man, my ſon; I
'thought you would act with diſcretion.

'I

'I accept the jewels, as a peace-offering to 'the *holy church*, for your ſins; and as the 'value of them (indeed they are coſtly 'gems) proves the ſincerity of your repen-'tance, I ſhall not heſitate to pronounce 'your ſins forgiven.

'For though adultery is a great ſin, and, 'in this caſe, aggravated by rape and in-'ceſt, yet, as you ſay, it was not becauſe 'ſhe was the wife of another man, and 'eſpecially your brother, that you deſired 'her, but merely as ſhe was a beautiful 'woman, therefore the adultery and inceſt 'come in but by *accident*; and then, as you 'raviſhed her only becauſe ſhe would not 'comply, the ſin of the rape is certainly her's, 'as I ſaid before; for, if I force a man to 'commit a crime, I am guilty of that 'crime, and not he: And again, though 'murder is a moſt heinous ſin, yet as you 'killed her, not merely to indulge a mur-'derous intent, but to prevent her diſco-'vering your having forced her, and ſo 'ruining you, the intention quite alters the 'nature of the fact, and makes it but ſelf-'preſervation, which is the firſt law of na-'ture. And laſtly, as you took the jewels, 'not with a deſign to rob her, but to offer 'them to the *church*, and accordingly have 'brought them, that concluſion ſanctifies

'the whole action, and makes your peace
'with heaven.

'For know, my ſon, that crimes which
'reſpect *man only*, as in your caſe, rape,
'adultery, inceſt, murder, and robbery,
'though bad in themſelves, 'tis true, yet
'are a pleaſure to the church to forgive, to
'a faithful and penitent ſon, *who believes*
'*all her doctrines, and pays due obedience to*
'*her clergy, the vicegerents of God on earth,*
'*the receivers of her revenues, and diſpenſers*
'*of her favours, and vengeance; to whom all*
'*earthly power is ſubſervient, who are the*
'*kings of kings, and lords of the world.*'—
'This, my ſon, is the doctrine of our holy
'church, as delivered by the moſt learned
'fathers of our order, in the belief of which
'you will be ſafe from all the powers of
'hell: do what you will, while you pay
'faith and obedience to the church, ſhe
'will pardon all your ſins.'—

When he had concluded his inſtructions, with this pious exhortation, and ſealed his abſolution with a bleſſing, the purified ſaint aroſe, and ſaid, 'Holy father, thou
'haſt ſet my ſoul at eaſe, with regard to
'*hereafter*, but ſtill I fear for this world.
'It unfortunately happened, that I was
'ſeen in the fact by a ſervant who eſcaped
'me, or I ſhould have charmed her ſilence
'too;

'too; and now I apprehend ſhe will in-
'form my brother.'—'This is unlucky,
'moſt unlucky (replied the prieſt) I know
'not what to adviſe; I am utterly at a
'loſs: If you ſhould prevent her malice,
'and accuſe her of the fact.'—'O, but fa-
'ther, the rape; there may be appearances
'of that, which would diſprove my charge
'againſt a woman.'—'Miſtake me not,
'my ſon, I did not adviſe any ſuch thing!
'heaven forbid that I ſhould adviſe to bear
'falſe witneſs againſt an innocent life; I
'am utterly at a loſs.'—'Suppoſe, father,
'I ſhould ſtill ſtrive to prevent my fears,
'by taking off my brother, as I cannot
'find her: this is the only way to make
'me eaſy; ha, father; is not that an hap-
'py thought; I wiſh it had occurred
'ſooner, and then I ſhould have given you
'but the one trouble.'—'Why, truly, ſon,
'the dead neither make nor receive diſco-
'veries; and ſelf-preſervation will certainly
'juſtify any thing, as I have ſaid before:
'but I muſt not adviſe you, your own ge-
'nius is ready, and can improve an hint;
'I muſt know nothing, till the affair is
'done: all I can ſay, is, that work unfi-
'niſhed had better never have been be-
'gun.

'Adieu, my ſon, my bleſſing waits on 'all your undertakings. But be ſure to 'hold the indulgent mercy of the church in 'grateful remembrance.'

The officer went away, happy in having lightened the burthen that was upon his conſcience, and big with the pious project of making the murder of his brother the firſt-fruits of his regeneration. He was the laſt *penitent* of that morning, and as ſoon as he was gone, his ghoſtly director retired to mortify his appetites in the refectory of the convent.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. IX.

*The father's rage on hearing that his penitent had ſecreted ſome of the jewels. The officer is purſued by his brother to the convent, whither he flies for ſanctuary. His reception from the father, and the terms of their reconciliation. The father ſends away the judge in a fright. The officer is received into the ſociety.*

THE honours of this world may be ſaid to be placed upon an hill, the aſcent to which is through different paths, the

the one, which virtue leads through, difficult and long, but certain; the other ſhort and eaſy, but dangerous and deceitful, yet ſtill by much the moſt frequented, vice, the guide through it, uſing all her allurements to decoy unwary adventurers, and magnifying every inſtance of ſucceſs ſo highly, as to make the numberleſs miſcarriages overlooked.

The great value of the jewels, which the officer had preſented to my maſter, took up ſo much of his thoughts, that as ſoon as he had finiſhed his collation, he retired to his cell, to meditate on the farther advantages he might make of this affair.

While he was in this pleaſing employment, another eccleſiaſtick entered, to acquaint him with the murder and robbery of the judge's wife, and among other particulars of the ſtory, ſaid, that her crucifix, thought to be the richeſt in *lay poſſeſſion* in all *Peru*, had been taken from her. —— 'That crucifix!' exclaimed my maſter ſtarting, for he knew it well, and had long paid his devotions to it, and now to be *cheated* thus of it, when he thought it ſo *juſtly* his due, provoked him almoſt to madneſs) 'That crucifix taken 'too! Damned! murderous! deceitful

"vil-

'villain! villain, on all ſides! But I 'will be revenged!"—

The other prieſt underſtood not what he meant, and was juſt going to enquire, when in ruſhed the captain, all aghaſt. 'O father! father! (ſaid he, as ſoon as he 'could ſpeak) ſanctuary! ſanctuary! my 'brother is at the gate, with all the offi-'cers of juſtice!' — At this the father grin'd an inſulting ſmile, and beckoning to the other prieſt to withdraw, 'Wretch, '(ſaid he) thou ſacriledgious wretch! how 'could'ſt thou dare to enter theſe holy 'walls, violated by thy guilt? Did'ſt thou 'not fear the fate of *Ananias* and *Sapphira*? '—As thou did'ſt deceive me, with thy 'feigned penitence, and haſt lied to the 'Lord, in concealing what thou had'ſt 'moſt juſtly devoted to him, I revoke the 'abſolution I gave thee, and will deliver 'thee to juſtice, to receive the puniſhment 'due to thy crimes. Theſe holy walls af-'ford no ſanctuary to ſacriledge!'

The poor criminal ſtood confounded at reproaches, which he dared not interrupt, though he could not comprehend the cauſe or meaning of them. At length, when the prieſt had exclaimed himſelf out of breath, the trembling wretch replied, 'O 'father! what can have kindled thy wrath

'againſt

'againſt me? I have committed no crime,
'ſince thy abſolution purged my ſoul! I
'was only going towards my brother's
'houſe, when I met him, and the ſervant
'with him, with all the officers of juſtice,
'in ſearch of me, on which I fled directly to
'you for ſanctuary.' 'I grant no ſanctuary
'to ſacriledge.' —— 'What ſacriledge, O
'father?'—'The crucifix, deceitful wretch!
'Where is thy ſiſter's crucifix? Haſt thou
'not defrauded the church of her due?
'Did'ſt thou not ſay, that thou tookedſt
'thy ſiſter's jewels, only to make a peace-
'offering for thy ſins, and then to ſecrete,
'thus, the moſt valuable part of them!
'*This is defrauding the labourer of his hire!*
'This is defrauding the church of her
'rites, without making the proper com-
'penſation! And what can be greater
'ſacriledge?'

Juſt at theſe words, a knocking at the gate awoke the *penitent* from his amaze, and made him apprehend that he had not a minute to loſe; he therefore, with the readieſt preſence of mind replied, — 'The 'crucifix, father! you aſtoniſh me! did I 'not give it to you?'——And then putting his hand into his boſom, and pulling it out with a look of ſurprize, he reached it to him.——'Forgive, O father (ſaid he)

'the

'the crime of inadvertency; I meant not
'to have kept it from you, but only over-
'looked it, in my confuſion! accept it!
'accept all I am maſter of, and ſave my
'life.'

'Son (replied the father, ſoftening his
'voice, and taking the crucifix) I am
'glad thou waſt not *intentionally* guilty of
'ſo unpardonable an offence! I believe,
'and accept thy excuſe. Be comforted,
'therefore, my ſon, thy ſins are forgiven.'
'O but father, the officers of juſtice.'——
'What officers! what juſtice dares attempt
'to ſhew her face within theſe walls? Thou
'art *my* penitent, I have abſolved thee,
'and I will defend thee. Sit down, and
'compoſe thy ſpirits, while I repel this
'bold intruſion, on the peace and privi-
'ledge of theſe holy walls.'

Saying thus, the father went to the gate of the convent, where ſtood the judge, diſplaying the guilt of the fugitive to the holy fathers, to engage them to refuſe him ſanctuary, and give him up to juſtice. But my maſter ſoon ſtopped him. 'Ceaſe (ſaid he,
'with a low voice, and downcaſt, medita-
'tive look) diſturb not the peace of theſe
'holy walls. The man you ſeek is *my*
'penitent. He has made ſatisfaction to
'the church, and reconciled himſelf to
'heaven.

'heaven. I come this moment from giv-
'ing him the ſeal of abſolution. Diſturb
'not the raptures of his ſoul, that is now
'joining with the angelick choirs, in the
'hymns of joy raiſed in heaven for his re-
'pentance. Depart in peace.'

'How father (exclaimed the judge) can
'a wretch, guilty of ſuch crimes, ſo ſoon
'have made his peace! He has deceived
'you, father; he has not told you half
'his guilt: rape, inceſt, adultery, and
'murder! Can *they* be thus forgiven? So
'eaſy pardons but encourage vice.'—'And
'who art thou, preſumptuous man! (re-
'plied the father, raiſing his voice, and
'putting on an air of authority) and who
'art thou, that dareſt thus to call the power
'of God's holy church in queſtion? What
'faith, or rather what hereſy has taught
'thee this preſumption? Doſt thou mea-
'ſure the divine authority of our unerring
'tribunal by the weak rules of thy blind
'law? Are not the keys of heaven ours;
'and have we not the power to looſe as well
'as bind? But I ſhall not argue more with
'thee *here*; there is a tribunal proper for
'ſuch *opinions* as thine; there try if thy
'knowledge of the laws will juſtify thy he-
'reſies; there thou art not judge.'

'The

The firſt mention of hereſy had ſtruck ſuch a terrour into the heart of the poor judge, that he was for ſome moments unable to reply. At laſt, recollecting himſelf a little, ‘ I ſubmit, O father, (ſaid he) ‘ I am no heretick; I have no *opinions* but ‘ what I learn from the holy church whoſe ‘ power I acknowledge in all its divine ‘ plenitude.’——‘ ’Tis well, (replied the ‘ prieſt) ’tis well; depart in peace, and ‘ to morrow I will viſit thee, and examine ‘ the ſtate of thy conſcience.’

The judge then making a profound reverence, withdrew without a murmur, and the triumphant father returned to his penitent. ‘ My ſon (ſaid he) thine enemies ‘ are defeated. Thy reſt is ſecure *here*. ‘ But ſuch is their power, and ſo ſtrong the ‘ general abhorrence that purſues thy *late* ‘ guilt, that it will not be ſafe for thee ‘ ever to leave this ſanctuary.’—‘ O father, ‘ muſt I be confined for ever here?’ — ‘ I ‘ ſaid not ſo, my ſon: there is a way for ‘ thee to go in triumph out, above the ‘ power of thy preſent perſecutors.’——— ‘ O name it, father.’ ——— ‘ Take our ‘ vows. Heaven has bleſſed thee with a ‘ fertile genius, and ſteel’d thy ſoul with ‘ fortitude. Theſe talents muſt not be ‘ buried, an account will be required of ‘ them;

'them; and where can they be put to proper uſe, except in the ſervice of the donor, in his church; there they will raiſe thee to that rank and power, which thou ſeeſt us enjoy. I ſee thou yieldeſt. Reſiſt not the motions of the holy ſpirit. I receive thee into the fold. I ſalute thee, brother. From this moment of thine election may'ſt thou date thy entrance into the higheſt honours of this world. The day approaches, when thy military knowledge and valour may alſo be called into practice. Great events are ripening in the womb of time!'——'I yield, O father, (replied the penitent) I receive thine offer with due ſubmiſſion and reſpect. And from this moment dedicate my valour, ſkill, and every power of my ſoul and body, to the implicit ſervice of thine holy order.'——'It is the hand of heaven that leads thee, no longer ſon, but brother. I will go and acquaint our brethren with thy *miraculous* converſion and election. Thou haſt no more to do but to make thy will, and bequeath all thy wealth to our order.'——'*Bequeath*, my father, muſt I die?'——'But to the world, brother, to live with us.'——'But I have nothing to bequeath.'——'Leave that to us. Do you only give all

'your

'your fortune, in the hands of your bro-
'ther, to our ſociety, in conſequence of
'your admiſſion; and let us find that for-
'tune. I go. The bell rings for *veſpers*.
'I ſhall ſend our notary to you; and when
'that is done, we will reſtore our exhauſted
'ſpirits with a ſlight repaſt in the refectory,
'where I will introduce thee to our bre-
'thren.'

In a word, all things were executed, and the new brother admitted in proper time into the order, of which he has ſince riſen to be one of the brighteſt ornaments. And the judge, to avoid the imputation of hereſy, which his *implied* doubt of the church's ſanctuary had given my maſter the hint of, was glad to pay half his wealth to the ſociety, as the fortune of his pious brother.

Soon after this affair was thus happily compleated, my maſter, that he might openly ſhew his adoration of *me* to the world, had me made into a crucifix, in which ſhape I was faſtened to his *roſary*, and there publickly received that adoration from the knee, which before was paid me only in the heart. —— A repetition of all the occurrences I ſaw in the ſervice of this maſter were unneceſſary, as the two I have related give a general idea of them, all tending to the gratification of his ruling

paſſions

paſſions of revenge, luſt, and avarice, with the variation only of accidental circumſtances, according to the difference of their objects.

## CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, and embarks for* Europe *in an* Engliſh *man of war. The cauſe and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his paſſage. On his arrival in* England *he is ſent by his maſter to ſettle ſome miſtakes in the voyage.*

I Was heartily ſick of ſuch a ſcene, when the time came for ſending me into theſe parts of the world, where ſcarcity enhances my value, and makes my power more extenſive. There being a war between Spain and England at that time, about a liberty of cutting ſticks upon a deſert ſhore, it was neceſſary to ſecure a ſafe paſſage for the treaſure, by eſtabliſhing a right underſtanding with the commander of an Engliſh man of war, which was cruizing in thoſe ſeas. It fell to my lot to go on this errand in the ſhape of a *doubloon*, into which I was caſt,

caſt, to ſave the profanation which a crucifix muſt ſuffer in the hands of hereticks.

There was ſome little addreſs requiſite to conduct this affair with the captain, in ſuch a manner as to keep it ſecret from his officers, to gain all of whom would have been too expenſive, beſide that he would never truſt his *ſacred* honour to the *fidelity* of ſo many. But this was readily adjuſted. The refinements of modern politeneſs having ſoftened the natural ferocity of a ſtate of war, and admiting an intercourſe of courteſy between parties who profeſs to ſeek each other's deſtruction, the *Spaniſh* governor ſent out a boat, with his compliments to the *Engliſh* captain, with a large ſupply of freſh proviſions, fruits, wine, *&c.*

This neceſſarily produced a return of civility from the well-bred captain; and in this intercourſe were the terms of his connivance ſettled, as the ſeal of which *I* was delivered to him, among a very large number of my fellows, who honourably punctual to his promiſe, at the appointed time, ſailed away from that ſtation, *in queſt of ſome ſhips of the enemy's which he expected to meet elſewhere*, and did not return till the *Spaniſh* treaſure was beyond his reach.

As this was a compliment of great conſequence to the *Spaniards*, the captain had been

been ſo handſomely conſidered for it, that his deſires were ſatisfied, and he only wiſh'd to be ſafe at home, to enjoy the wealth he had ſo happily acquired. Often would he take me out, for the beauty of my new impreſſion had ſtruck his eye, and gained me the honour of being kept in his purſe, often, I ſay, would he take me out of his purſe, and gazing on me till his eyes watered, 'O thou end of all my toils and dangers! '(would he ſay) thou crown of all my 'hopes! now I have obtained thee I am 'content! Let others ſeek that phantom 'glory, I have in thee the more ſolid re-'ward, for which I always fought, nor 'ſhall any thing tempt me to hazard being 'ſeparated from thee.' A reſolution which he had an opportunity of ſhewing in all its ſtrength a few days after, when a ſhip appeared which he thought to be a *Spaniſh* man of war.

As ours was a ſhip of force, and all the officers (except the captain now) were very poor; and as the *Spaniſh* ſhips are always richly laden with treaſure in thoſe ſeas, the crew was in the higheſt ſpirits at this ſight, and made every thing ready to attack her, with the moſt eager alacrity. But the caſe was quite different with the captain. He was *now* as rich as he deſired, and dreaded the

the loſs of that wealth which he had ſo long laboured for. He, therefore, retired into his cabbin, while the lieutenants were *clearing ſhip*, and taking *me* out of his purſe, with a look of tenderneſs that brought the tears into his eyes, 'And ſhall I hazard the 'loſs of thee, (he cried) the object, the 'reward of a life of toil and danger? Shall 'I ſacrifice the only real good of life, to 'that chimera, honour? to that bubble 'lighter than air, and more variable than 'the wind, the intereſt of my country? 'What is honour without wealth? What 'is a country to him who has nothing in 'it? Let the poor fight for money, I 'have enough: let the ambitious fight for 'glory, I deſpiſe the empty name. Let 'thoſe who have a property in their coun-'try fight for it, I have none, nor can 'have, nor any of its bleſſings, without 'thee; and therefore will not venture 'thy loſs for any ſuch vain conſidera-'tions.'

As ſoon as he had formed this prudent reſolution, he claſped *me* to his heart, kiſſed me, and returned me into his purſe, juſt as the lieutenant came in, to tell him, they could now *make* the ſhip, which muſt be vaſtly rich, ſhe was ſo deep in the water. My maſter made no reply, but taking a tele-

ſcope in his hand, he went upon the quarter-deck, and viewing her for ſome time, with great apparent earneſtneſs, 'You are all miſtaken (ſaid he) in that ſhip! rich 'indeed! and ſo ſhe may remain for us. 'That ſhip is a firſt-rate man of war by her 'ſize: and as for her depth in the water, 'ſhe is only brought down by her guns 'which are fifty-two pounders at leaſt. '*Put about* the ſhip, and make all ſail poſ-'ſible from her. I am anſwerable for his 'majeſty's ſhip, committed to my care, 'and will not ſacrifice her againſt ſuch 'odds. Her weight of metal would blow 'us out of the water. Beſide, I have a 'packet on board, and muſt not go out of 'my way: *about ſhip*, and away directly, 'I ſay.'

The officers ſtood aghaſt at this ſpeech, that diſappointed all their golden hopes. They urged, they beſeeched, they remonſtrated, that it was impoſſible ſhe could be what he ſaid: they inſiſted that the colour of her ſails, and the heavineſs of her going, proved her to be a ſhip of trade that had been long at ſea; and as for her bulk, it only encouraged them to hope ſhe would prove the better prize, as all the ſhips that carry the treaſure are very large; that they had obſerved they wronged her ſo much,

they could go round her if they pleaſed; and begg'd only that they might be permitted to take a nearer view of her, which they were confident would prove her to be what they ſaid. They alledged the opportunity of making all their fortunes; the honour, the intereſt of their country. They begged, ſwore, ſtormed, and wept; but all in vain. The captain had taken his reſolution; and would vouchſafe no other anſwer than a repetition of what he had ſaid before, 'that *he* was accountable for 'his majeſty's ſhip, and would not hazard 'her, to gratify them: beſide, the delay of 'the packet he had on board, might be of 'worſe conſequence than the taking of 'ſuch a ſhip, ſhould ſhe even be what they 'ſaid, though he was *certain* to the con-'trary, would make amends for. And 'that, as to going nearer to her, the length 'of her guns would enable them to drive 'every ſhot through and through his ſhip, 'at a diſtance that his could never reach 'her from; though if they ſhould be mad 'enough to engage her, his *ſmall* ſhot 'could never pierce ſuch mountains of 'timber as her ſides were barricaded with.' And ſo, as his power was abſolute, they were obliged to ſubmit, and *off he ſheer'd.*

It

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction which this affair threw our ſhip into. The officers acted all the inconſiſtent outrages of madneſs. The men chewed the *quid*, damned their eyes and limbs for their bad luck, and went to work as uſual; while ſeveral poor ſick wretches, whoſe ſpirits had been ſo raiſed by the hopes of ſuch a prize, that they had forgot their complaints, and exerted all their ſtrength, to aſſiſt in the engagement, now ſunk under the weight of the diſappointment, and crawled back, many of them to die in their hammocks.

But the captain had carried his point, and regarded nothing elſe: though indeed he was ſomewhat diſconcerted a few days after, when he learned from another ſhip, that ſhe really was a regiſter ſhip of immenſe value, and ſo weakened by hard weather and ſickneſs, that ſhe could not have attempted any reſiſtance, but had prepared to *ſtrike* the moment ſhe ſaw us. This information added ſuch fuel to the rage that inflamed the officers before, that all intercourſe between them and their captain was intirely broke of, ſo that *I* became his ſole companion.

This laſted all the while we were at a diſtance from *England*, but as we drew near home, the captain's ſtiffneſs began to bend,

and he made ſeveral advances to a reconciliation and general amneſty, as he could not but feel ſome apprehenſions for his conduct from his ſuperiors. But all was in vain. The thought of returning in poverty, inſtead of that wealth which he had diſappointed them of, kept up their reſentments, and they determined to complain, if only for the ſatisfaction of revenge.

This convinced my maſter, that methods muſt be taken to obviate their attempts, or he might run a greater hazard at home than he had intended to avoid abroad. He therefore prudently concluded, that the ſame argument which had been ſo powerful with himſelf, would be the moſt effectual to vindicate what he had done with others, and that it would be better to ſhare the ſpoil, than riſk the loſs of all.

For this intent, as ſoon as he arrived in England, he took *me* from his purſe once more, and looking earneſtly at me for ſome moments, 'We muſt part (ſaid he, with a 'ſigh) we muſt part! but I hope to good 'purpoſe. Thou only waſt the cauſe of 'that conduct which now gives me fear; 'exert therefore thy influence equally, 'where I now ſend thee, and thou wilt ex-'cuſe my fault, if it is one.' Tears, at the thought of loſing me, here choaked his ut-

utterance. He gave me a laſt kiſs, and ſent me directly away, in company with a conſiderable number more, to mediate his peace.

## CHAP. XI.

*The good conſequences of a right underſtanding between certain perſons.* CHRYSAL'S *reflections on his firſt ſeeing the publick offices in* London. *His maſter viſits a gentleman, who, in the vehemence of his rage againſt certain abuſes, hits himſelf a violent ſlap on the face. The neceſſity of decency, and the methods of ſupporting it, inſtanced in the hiſtory of a pretty fellow.*

AS the delicate nature of this tranſaction required ſome addreſs, he entruſted the management of it to his purſer, who had convinced him, by many inſtances, of his ſagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great.

As ſoon as my new maſter arrived in London, his firſt care was to execute the commiſſion for which *we* had been given to him; but the perſon, to whom his application was to be made, happening to be

out of town for a few days, that he might not loſe any time, he proceeded to ſettle ſome affairs of his own; in the courſe of which, I had an opportunity of ſeeing into ſome part of the ſecrets of his myſterious buſineſs.

The profeſſed motive for his coming to town, was to ſettle his own, and paſs his captain's accounts, between which there was a connection not neceſſary to be known to any other; for though my late maſter did not think it conſiſtent with his dignity to be too familiar with his officers, and generally ſlighted their opinion, if only to ſhew his own ſuperiority and keep them at a proper diſtance, with him and his purſer the caſe was quite otherwiſe, the beſt underſtanding always ſubſiſting between them, and every affair being concerted with the greateſt harmony, to their mutual advantage: an agreement, which beſide the comfort and convenience of it to themſelves, had this happy influence over the reſt of the ſhip's company, that it kept them, if not eaſy, at leaſt quiet, from all murmurings, and complaints of bad proviſions, ſhort weights, and ſuch like *imaginary* grievances, which the reſtleſs temper of ſeamen is too apt to make the cauſe of much trouble to the purſer, and diſturbance to the captain, when

theſe happen not to agree between themſelves. But as the contrary was the caſe here, their common intereſt animated the aſſiduity of my maſter, and made him go directly to the ſeveral offices and contractors, with whom his buſineſs lay, to prepare every thing in proper order for publick inſpection.

On my firſt going to theſe publick offices, every thing gave me pleaſure. There was ſuch an appearance of regularity in all the proceedings, of eaſe and affluence in the officers, that I could not help ſaying to myſelf, 'happy ſtate, whoſe meaneſt ſervants are gentlemen! whoſe buſineſs is reduced to a ſyſtem, above danger of confuſion or abuſe!' But a nearer view ſhewed things in another light. The firſt perſon my maſter went to, was the gentleman who ſupplied him with thoſe kinds of cloathing for the ſeamen, which are by theſe merry poor fellows emphatically called *ſlops*. As he was juſt going to dinner, my maſter accepted of his invitation, and ſat down with him. A round or two of loyal toaſts, to the ſucceſs of the navy, and continuance of the war, having waſhed down their fare, and refreſhed their ſpirits after the fatigue of a full meal, they proceeded to buſineſs. 'I come, Sir (ſaid my maſter) 'to ſettle the account of the laſt cruize.

'Here it is: you ſee moſt of the articles 'have gone off pretty well: but I muſt 'tell you, that you are more obliged to 'ſome of your friends for that, than you 'are aware of perhaps; for if I had not 'prevailed on the captain, to let the ale-'houſe-keepers, and gin-women come on 'board, and keep the ſlop-ſellers off, when 'the men received their pay, on going 'out, you would have had but a blank liſt 'of it. But, by this management, the 'fellows ſpent all their money in drink, 'and then neceſſity drove them to me for 'cloths.'

'Here is to the captain's good health '(anſwered the other) and that I may ſoon 'ſee him at the head of the navy: I am 'very much obliged to you and him, and 'ſhall conſider your friendſhip properly. 'But is there no way of preventing thoſe 'pedlars from intruding thus upon us? I 'am reſolved I will try: I believe I can 'make an Intereſt, (you underſtand me) 'that will procure me an order to exclude 'them: at leaſt, if I cannot do that, I 'will inſiſt on raiſing my terms; for every 'branch of buſineſs is now ſo loaded with 'preſents and perquiſites, that there is 'ſcarce any thing to be got. A man who 'goes to a public office, to receive money,

runs

'runs the gauntlet through ſo many of 'them, that if he does not make up his 'accounts, in a very maſterly manner in-'deed, he will have but little to ſhew, for 'his pains, in the end.'—'Very true (re-'plied my maſter) I have had experience 'of what you ſay, this very morning. 'You know it is ſome years ſince I have 'been in town before: I was therefore 'quite ſurprized at the gay appearance of 'every clerk, in the offices. Our mid-'ſhipmen, on the paying off of a ſhip, are 'nothing to them: So! thought I to my-'ſelf: this is very well! Such fine gentle-'men as theſe will never ſtoop to take the 'little perquiſites which their ſhabby pre-'deceſſors were ſo eager for: They can-'not want them. Accordingly, as ſoon 'as I had done my buſineſs, I was prepa-'ring to make an handſome ſpeech, and 'a leg, and ſo walk off; but I was ſoon 'undeceived; and found, to my no ſmall 'aſtoniſhment, that if the caſe was altered, 'it was no way for the better, for me; the 'preſent fine gentlemen being to the full 'as rapacious as the former poor fellows, 'and with this addition to the evil, that 'their expectations were raiſed, in propor-'tion to their appearance, ſo that they

'muſt have a crown, where the others 'were ſatisfied with a ſhilling.

'And how can it be otherwiſe (returned 'the other) while the principals ſet them 'ſuch an example of extravagance, and 'inforce obedience to it in the manner they 'do: for though their own exorbitant ſa-'laries enable them to live with the luxury 'of aldermen at home, and make the ap-'pearance of courtiers abroad, how can 'they think, that their hackney under-'lings ſhall be able to change their dreſs, 'with the court, and appear with all the 'preciſe foppery of pretty fellows, if they 'have not clandeſtine ways of getting mo-'ney: and that this is the caſe, I can give 'you an inſtance not to be contradicted.

'Perhaps you may remember a little 'boy, that ran about the houſe here, 'when you were in town laſt. His mo-'ther was ſervant to my firſt wife: you 'cannot forget black-ey'd Nan: who was 'the father is nothing to my ſtory, but I 'took care of the boy. When he grew up, 'I thought the beſt thing I could do for 'him, was to get him into one of the pub-'lic offices, for he was too ſoft for my own 'buſineſs, and this I imagined would ſhar-'pen him, and 50 *l.* a year keep him from 'being an expence to me. Accordingly,

'I got him admitted as an additional 'clerk, in this buſy time; and that his 'appearance ſhould not ſhame my recom-'mendation, I added a London-made ſuit 'to his country wardrobe, which I thought 'good enough for him, to wear every day.

'Well; thus equipped, to the office he 'went, as good-looking a lad as ever came 'from a 12*l.* a year academy in Yorkſhire, 'which had been the height of his educa-'tion. But I ſoon found that I had been 'out in my reckoning, for going with him 'to introduce him to the head-clerk, whom 'I had before ſpoken properly to, in his 'behalf, I found the whole office in deep 'mourning, which, as it had been ordered 'only for the court, and was to hold but for 'a fortnight longer, I had never thought of 'dreſſing him in; but I ſoon found that I 'had not a proper opinion of the conſe-'quence of the place.—For the head clerk 'gave me a friendly hint, that it was ex-'pected, that all the clerks in his majeſty's 'offices, ſhould ſhew the decent reſpect of 'conforming to the dreſs of the court, on 'theſe ſolemn occaſions.—I could not help 'exclaiming, I believe a little too ſhortly, 'What, Sir! upon a ſalary of 50*l.* a year? '—Sir (replied he) no body is forced to

'take that ſalary; and they who do not
'like the rules of the office, are at liberty
'to leave it: and then turned off upon his
'heel.—'I beg your pardon, Sir (ſaid I,
'ſeeing my error) it was an overſight of
'mine; but it ſhall be amended.'—'The
'ſooner the better, Sir (anſwered he) for
'his lordſhip will be in the office to-morrow,
'and he muſt not ſee any thing ſo irregular;
'and pray ſir (turning to the lad) get that
'fleece on your head ſhorn a little (his hair
'hung down, in modeſt ringlets, upon his
ſhoulders) and ſtrive to appear ſomething
'like a gentleman.

'I ſaw it was in vain to ſay any thing,
'and ſo took the boy away with me; and
'by noon, next day, brought him again,
'in all the faſhionable trappings of woe,
'and with his hair ſhorn indeed, and tied
'up in a bag, by a French barber, for I
'would not ſtand for a trifle when my hand
'was in, deſirous to ſee how he would be
'received in his new appearance; but alas!
'I had forgot that indiſpenſible article of a
'gentleman's dreſs, a ſword, which I was
'therefore obliged to ſend out for directly.
'In a fortnight's time, the order for the
'court's going into ſecond mourning, put
'me to the ſame expence over again; for
'the rules of decency were not to be diſ-

'penſed

'penſed with; and then, in a month after,
'it was as neceſſary to trim his light grey
'frock with a ſilver edging of coxcombe,
'that he might not appear worſe than his
'fellows; all which, with many other
'as neceſſary *et cetera*'s, by the end of the
'firſt quarter, conſumed his year's ſa-
'lary.

'This enraged me to that degree, that
'I was going to take him away directly; but
'the boy had by this time, got ſome inſight
'into the ways of the place, and prevented
'me, by ſaying, that if I would try, but
'for another quarter, he was ſatisfied that
'his perquiſites would more than defray
'all ſuch expences; and ſo I find they do,
'for though he is now as ſmart well-dreſſed
'a young fellow as any about town, he has
'never ſince troubled me for a ſhilling:
'nay, more than all this, he aſſures me,
'there are ſome of his fellow clerks who
'keep footmen and horſes, and have routs
'and concerts at their houſes, as regularly
'as people of the firſt rank; and all by the
'perquiſites of a place of fifty pounds a
'year.

'Now as all thoſe perquiſites are draw-
'backs upon us, as I ſaid before, we can-
'not carry on the buſineſs on the uſual
'terms, if we do not bring up our loſs in

'the

'the quality of the goods, for it would be 'abſurd to expect, that we ſhould lower our 'living to let ſuch fellows run away with the 'profit of our induſtry. In ſhort, my wife's 'chariot ſhall not be put down, nor will I 'deny myſelf a bottle of claret to give you, 'or any other friend, to ſave all the ſeamen 'in Britain from periſhing with cold: Cha-'rity begins at home; I will inſiſt upon 'having thoſe pedlars prevented from inter-'loping upon our trade, and ſo, Sir, my 'ſervice to you.'

## CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter gives his friend ſome hints, that make him lower his note. An uncommon piece of generoſity returned more politely, than could be expected from the parties. An odd ſtory of an unfaſhionable ſteward. The ſucceſs of* CHRYSAL's *mediation in favour of his late maſter.*

MY maſter had heard him out, though not with the greateſt patience, and now taking the opportunity of his ſtopping to drink, 'All this may be true (ſaid 'he) and what you propoſe might poſſibly

'have

'have been done, and with the effect you
'desire, some time ago: but matters are
'altered a good deal, at present, both a-
'mong the gentlemen of the navy, and
'here to, as I am told: and indeed, in
'respect to this affair, those things are
'made so infamously bad, and rated so
'high, that no body can speak in the de-
'fence of them: nay, it even goes almost
'against my own conscience to *utter* them;
'for only think with yourself, what a bare-
'faced imposition it is, to make a poor
'wretch pay seven shillings for a course
'rotten jacket, when even a Jew shall sell
'him a sound one, and of finer stuff, for
'four and sixpence; and every thing else
'at the same rate. In short, this point is
'so overstrained, that it will probably over-
'turn the whole trade, in the end; for se-
'veral of the captains are so provoked at
'it, that they take every method they can,
'to prevent the men from taking up any
'thing from us; particularly, that which I
'hinted before, of keeping off the alehouse-
'keepers, and such people, and encoura-
'ging slop-sellers to come on board, when
'the men are paying, by which means
'they buy good comfortable cloaths, at
'half the price of our rotten trash: Indeed,
'one of them went so far, as to buy in a

'parcel

'parcel of good ſhoes, at his own expence,
'and make a preſent of a pair a-piece to
'all his *top-men*, when they were going
'out on a cruize, as they had ſpent their
'money, and could not buy for ourſelves,
'and our ſhoes were ſo bad, that the firſt
'time they went aloft with them, after
'they were wet, the rattlings tore them all
'to pieces, ſo that it was a common thing
'to ſee a man come down bare-footed,
'who had gone up with a new pair of ſhoes
'on. Though it is but juſt to comfort you,
'with an account of the return which he
'met for his kindneſs, which was no leſs
'than a *round-robin* * to the lords of the
'admiralty, for his refuſing to let them go
'aſhore, and ſpend their money, in the
'ſame manner, the next time they came
'in.

'And ſuch a return may their officiouſ-
'neſs always meet (replied the other) for
'meddling with matters which do not con-
'cern them: cannot they be content with
'their own large gains, without interfering
'to hinder others? But I ſee how it is:
'the ſpirit of patriotiſm has got into them

* The name that ſeamen call their complaints a-gainſt their captain; it is taken from the manner of their ſigning them, which is in a circle, ſo that there is no knowing who ſigns firſt.

'too,

'too, forſooth, and they muſt be ſhewing 'their regard to the publick! What an evil 'effect will the bad example of one man 'have! There was a time, when they 'would not have dared to do this. To ſay 'the truth, my friend, this is not the firſt 'alarm we have received on this head; 'though what to do about it, we cannot 'tell: indeed, I believe we muſt e'en mend 'our hands; which, as half a loaf is better 'than no bread, hard as it is upon us, is 'preferable to loſing the trade quite; in 'the mean time, I am obliged to you and 'your captain for your friendſhip, and hope 'you will accept of *this* return.' They then proceeded to ſettle their accounts, as ſoon as which were finiſhed, my maſter took his leave, and went on with his buſineſs, which was exactly of the ſame nature, and concluded in the ſame way, with every perſon whom he dealt with.

As ſoon as theſe tranſactions were ended, his next care was to paſs his captain's accounts, which he alſo ſucceeded in, without any difficulty, though for this he was more indebted to the chance of a lucky minute, than he had apprehended. For they were no ſooner cloſed, than an affair happened that gave a turn, entirely new, to the whole courſe of buſineſs, in that channel.

When

When the accounts of the next captain came to be examined, the clerk glancing his eye curſorily over them, in the uſual manner, on looking at the amount, 'There 'muſt be ſome miſtake here (ſaid he).'—'How ſo, Sir (ſaid the captain, who was 'preſent) let me look at the account, if 'you pleaſe. No, Sir, there is no miſtake, 'I believe.—Pray where do you mean?'—'In the caſting it up, Sir (anſwered the 'clerk) you ſee, the amount is made to be 'but 800*l.*'—'Nor ſhould it be more (re-'plied the captain) I ſummed up the ac-'count myſelf, and theſe figures are of my 'own writing.'—'How can that poſſibly 'be, Sir (returned the clerk in a ſurprize) 'but 800*l.* for all the repairs, *wear and* '*tear*, of a man of war, on ſuch a ſtation, 'for four years! I ſuppoſe then, Sir, the 'ſhip had a thorough repair going out, 'and wants the like now! To be ſure, it 'can be done better, and cheaper here, 'than abroad, and therefore you were in 'the right to bring her home, to get it.'—'Not at all, Sir (added the captain) that 'was not the caſe: ſhe had no thorough 'repair going out, and is come home in 'better order than ſhe went, as this return 'of the officers of the yard ſhews.'—'*Good* '*God! Sir, how did you manage?*'—'To

the

'the beſt of my judgment, Sir; I laid out 'nothing but what I thought neceſſary, and 'I charged nothing but what I laid out: I 'mean not to arraign the conduct of others; 'I only ſpeak for myſelf. In theſe caſes, I 'look upon a man as a ſteward to the pub-'lick; and I ſhould think it as great diſ-'honeſty to betray, or break that truſt, as 'to wrong a private perſon.'

This ſpeech was heard with aſtoniſhment, and returned with a cold compliment; as it came too home to many, to meet general approbation; however, the affair neceſſarily had an effect not very agreeable to ſome preſent; for the next captain's accounts ariſing to near four times the ſum of the laſt, ſuch an immediate precedent made the difference ſo glaring, that it was impoſſible to avoid putting a ſtop to them; though ours, which had been ſtill higher, had gone off ſmoothly, and without the leaſt remark.

My maſter having concluded this affair ſo happily, proceeded next on the great cauſe of his coming to town, in which, with our aſſiſtance, he laboured ſo ſucceſsfully, that the captain's *miſtake* met only a gentle reprimand.

I here came into the poſſeſſion of a new maſter, and immediately after changed my *Spaniſh* appearance for the faſhion of the country, and in the ſhape of *a guinea*, entered into the moſt extenſive ſtate of ſublunary influence, becoming the price of every name, that is reſpected under heaven.

## CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL *explains ſome farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country; and enters into the ſervice of a noble lord. The ſagacity of Mr.* Poundage, *and his addreſs in Buſineſs.*

I Am now entering upon a ſtage, where the ſcenes are ſo various, and ſo quickly changed, that it will require your ſtricteſt attention to keep pace with my relation. But to make this the eaſier to you, and to diſincumber your ſurprize from doubts, at my repeating the paſt lives of perſons, in whoſe poſſeſſion I have been but a few moments, I muſt premiſe to you, that *our* knowledge is very different from that of men.

men. I have told you, that we know all things *intuitively*, without the trouble, delay, and errors of *diſcourſe* or reaſoning. I muſt now further inform you, that this intuition extends not only to the preſent face of things, but alſo has a retroſpect to the whole ſeries of their exiſtence, from its firſt beginning: the *concatenation* between cauſe and effect being ſo plain to our eyes, that let us but ſee any one event of the life of a man, and we immediately know every particular that preceded it.

As to *futurity* indeed, it is not yet determined how far forward we can look into that; ſome allowing us to have the ſame power of *foreſight* as we have of *retroſpect*; which was the opinion that ſupported the credit of oracles in former days. But that notion is now exploded, and men argue, that our *foreſight* extends only to *natural* cauſes and effects: but in the actions of man, his *free-will* ſo often breaks that order, that it is impoſſible for us to know this moment how he will act the next, from any obſervation of the paſt; and they think they prove their argument by this, that if ſpirits could fore-know all a man's actions, it would ſpare them the trouble of tempting him to any particular ones. —A favourite opinion, this of *temptation*, in the pre-

preſent way of thinking, as it is a ready excuſe for throwing the blame of every unfortunate or evil action on the poor *Devil*, who perhaps knew nothing of the matter all the while.

But though the *Devil* may not be always able to foretell poſitively, every one allows that *he* can generally gueſs well; a power which I mention to you, as I may often exert it in this account.—I ſay, The *Devil*, to accommodate himſelf to the general mode of ſpeaking, which refers every action, good or bad, the cauſe of which men do not know, to ſome being which they call by that name.— But to return to my ſtory.

From the *Mint*, where I put on the ſhape of a guinea, I was ſent to the *Bank*, where the pleaſure I had felt at the beauty and convenience of my new figure was conſiderably cooled, at my being thrown into ſo large an heap, as took away all my particular conſequence, and ſeemed to threaten a long ſtate of inactivity, before it might come to my turn to be brought into action. But I ſoon found myſelf agreeably miſtaken, and that the *circulation* there was too quick to admit of ſuch delay: for I was that very day paid out to a noble lord, in his penſion from the miniſtry.

It was about two in the afternoon, when I was brought to his lordſhip's levee, where the grandeur of his looks, and the magnificence of every thing about him, made me ſo pleaſed with my ſituation, that I thought I could be ſatisfied to fix my abode with him for ſome time.

He was juſt ariſen, and ſeated at the fire, leaning on a writing table covered with green velvet, on which lay ſome books open, and ſeveral letters which he had juſt broke the ſeals off, and was beginning to read, while a female ſervant, beautiful as *Hebe*, poured out his tea at a ſide-board, and a page, like *Ganymede*, handed it to him.

In this eaſy indifference he ſat, caſting an eye upon a book, or reading a paragraph in a letter, between every ſip of his breakfaſt, when I was laid upon his table, by his ſteward, with theſe words, — 'Two 'hundred, my lord'—'Two hundred, (re-'plied his lordſhip) the order was for five 'hundred!'—'But, my lord, the butcher, 'the baker!'—'*What are theſe wretches to 'me! Is not my whole eſtate ſufficient for 'them?*' 'My lord, there is not a ſhilling 'to be got from your tenants, the times are 'ſo bad and the taxes ſo high! and an ounce 'of proviſions could not be had'—'*Then*

'*you*

'*you might have all faſted! I muſt have mo-*
'*ney for this evening; I am engaged in a*
'PARTY, *and cannot be off.*' — 'My lord,
'your lordſhip's taylor deſired me to ſpeak
'to you; he is to appear before his com-
'miſſioners to-morrow, and begs' ——
'*What can I do? I would relieve him if I*
'*could, but I have not money for myſelf: I*
'*can not, will not do without five hundred more*
'*this evening, get it where or how you will*'.—
'My lord, I was thinking to apply to Mr.
'*Diſcount*, the ſcrivener, but he ſaid the
'laſt time, that he would lend no more on
'that eſtate, without the immediate power
'o f cutting the timber.' — '*Well, damn*
'*him, let him have it, though it will not be*
'*fit to cut theſe ten years; and, do you hear,*
'*get me a thouſand to day*' — 'A thouſand,
'my lord! you ſaid five hundred: I am
'afraid he will think a thouſand too much!'
—'*Then he ſhall never have it; let me do as*
'*I will; do not I know, that the timber is*
'*worth twice as much this moment, if I could*
'*wait to ſet it to ſale; I will not be impoſed*
'*on by the raſcal: I'll go myſelf to my neigh-*
'*bour* Worthland *directly; he is a man of*
'*honour, and will be above taking advan-*
'*tage, though I did oppoſe his election.*'—'As
'your lordſhip pleaſes for that. But then,
'perhaps, Mr. *Diſcount* will call in all his
'money,

'money, if he ſaw you put yourſelf into 'other hands; beſide, I am not certain 'that he will refuſe, and therefore I ſhould 'think it better to try him firſt; you may 'do this after. Though I muſt take the 'liberty to ſay, I ſhould be ſorry to ſee 'your lordſhip obliged to ſtoop to *Sir John 'Worthland*, after all the expence you have 'been at to give him trouble. For to be 'ſure he would boaſt of it in the country, 'if it was only to make you look little, 'and prevent your oppoſing him again'— '*Why there may be ſomething in that: and 'therefore ſee what is to be done with* DIS-'COUNT; *but I muſt have the thouſand at any 'rate, five hundred of which give to poor 'Buckram, and bring me the other as ſoon as 'poſſible, for I am in haſte out.*' — 'Then 'your lordſhip had better ſign this deed 'firſt, to ſave the time of coming back 'again, if he ſhould do it'— '*Aye, let me 'ſee it; there: and make haſte.*—(And then 'turning to his page) *reach me that paper, 'this pen is ſo good it tempts me to write a 'letter, while I wait for Poundage's return.*' And ſo humming a new tune, he went on with his breakfaſt without the leaſt concern.

You are ſo great a ſtranger to the ways of that part of the world which deals in

money-matters, that you will be ſurprized when I tell you, that while this Mr. *Poundage* brought me from the Bank, he had called upon Mr. *Diſcount* and brought him to his lord's, to do *his* buſineſs.

But you muſt not imagine this was to lend his lordſhip money. Nothing leſs. It was only to appear as the nominal lender of 1000 *l.* of his lordſhip's own money, which *Poundage* had that very morning received from ſome of his tenants in the country, and which, if he could not bring it in better, he meant to replace with part of the price of the timber, which he was to buy in *Diſcount*'s name, who was a creature of his own.

So remarkable a tranſaction gave me a curioſity to take a *view* of *Poundage*'s life, the main lines of which I will juſt touch over, while you may think him gone for the money, and his lordſhip dreſſing for his engagement.

CHAP.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. XIV.

*The history of* Mr. Thomas Poundage. *His lordship goes to his appointment. An evening's entertainment in high life.* CHRYSAL *changes his service: his reflections on the ruling passion of the times.*

MR. *Thomas Poundage* was the offspring of a gypsy, who had left him in the straw he was born on, in an old barn near his lordship's father's, his weakness and deformity making her not think him worth the trouble of carrying away.

The old lord himself happening to be the first who heard his cries, as he was riding by, took compassion on the little helpless wretch, and ordered him to be taken care of at his own expence, and not sent to the parish.

Such an uncommon instance of charity was immediately attributed to a tenderer motive: a suspicion, however injurious to his lordship, so advantagious to the *foundling*, that it doubled the care and attendance on him, and made him appear of such consequence, that *Mr. Thomas Poundage* him-

ſelf, his lordſhip's ſteward, condeſcended to ſtand god-father for him, and gave him his own name. As *Maſter Tommy* grew up, he ſhewed all the ſharpneſs and cunning of his race, which old *Poundage* repreſenting to his lord, as a capacity for learning, he was put to the beſt ſchools; and being of the ſame age with his lordſhip's eldeſt ſon, his preſent maſter, was ſettled as an humble companion and attendant upon him; in which ſtation, the pliancy of his temper ſoon gained him his maſter's favour, as his ſecrecy and diſcretion did his confidence; no ſervice appearing too difficult or mean for his undertaking, to pleaſe his maſter, eſpecially in the myſteries of intrigue; nor a look ever betraying his ſucceſs.

Theſe ſervices naturally produced an intimacy, that opened to him all his maſter's ſecrets, and gave him ſuch conſequence with him, that upon the death of his father, old *Poundage* was *ſuperannuated upon a penſion*, and the place given to him, in which he had behaved himſelf ſo judiciouſly, that in about ten years he had amaſſed ſo large a fortune, as to be able to ſupply his maſter's wants (with the aſſiſtance of his own money ſometimes) without the ſcandal of expoſing them to any other: a ſervice that amply recompenced to his lordſhip's honour,

what-

whatever prejudice it may be ſuppoſed to do his affairs.

'Tis true, his thus ſupplanting his god-father and benefactor *old Poundage*, had not met with the approbation of ſuch as were not well acquainted with the world, and particularly, as the old gentleman, in his rage, had accounted for all his kindneſs to him, by owning a relation, which he had before ſtrove to fix upon his lord, by many plain inſinuations, though he now ſaid he had long before revealed to his ungrateful ſon, the ſecret of his birth.

However, if he had communicated this ſecret, our ſon of fortune had kept it ſo well, that he could now deny it with ſafety; nor had he profited ſo little by his father's example, as to be moved with a ſuggeſtion that evidently appeared, however true it might be in itſelf, to ſpring at that time from reſentment. And as he could not expect to reap any great advantage from being acknowledged for the ſpurious ſon of one who had many legitimate children to inherit his fortune, he thought it better to confirm the former opinion, by his ſlights of the claim of *Poundage*, and ſince he muſt be the baſtard of one of them, chuſe the lord before his ſervant.

But to return to my maſter. He was dreſſed by that time *Poundage* came back with the money, when taking the five hundred *for his own uſe*, he went to his appointment.

As to the other five hundred, which he had ordered to be paid to his taylor, for fear of the wretch's applying to the lord himſelf, in his diſpair, *Poundage* did ſend for him, and *in compaſſion to his diſtreſs, advanced him* 400 *l.* of his own money, *for he had not a ſhilling of his lord's in his hands; for which piece of ſervice he deſired no other conſideration, than a receipt for* 500 *l. though it might be ſo long before he could get it back, that he expected to be a loſer by his friendſhip, which Mr. Buckram need not, as he could bring it up in his next bill.*

It was five o' clock, and dinner juſt ſerving up, when my lord joined his company. At dinner, and during the reign of the bottle for a couple of hours after, the converſation turned upon all the polite topicks of the times, wherein there could be no long diſputes, as every difference in opinion was immediately determined by a *bet*, the ſupreme deciſion of peace, war, religion and law.—But this diſſipated *pidling* ſoon gave way to the ſerious buſineſs of the evening, to which they all adjourned, with an

a-

attention and anxiety worthy of the conſequence at ſtake.

It is impoſſible to give you any idea of this ſcene, in which every moment produced ſuch ſudden tranſitions from diſpair to exultation, from ſhouts of joy to the moſt blaſphemous execrations of their very being, on the viciſſitudes in the momentary fortunes of the actors, that the very recollection of it is a pain even to me, as it bears too ſtrong a reſemblance to the tortures of the damned.

However, it made no ſuch impreſſion upon them: but they continued at it till about ſix in the *morning*, when they retired for the *night*.

In the courſe of the *evening*, I often went the circuit of the whole company round, and at length was carried home by a new maſter. But before I ſay any thing of him, I muſt give you a few ſlight ſketches of the characters of ſome others of the company, and particularly of my *late* lord, in whoſe whole appearance and behaviour there was ſomething ſo extraordinary.

There is ſcarce a ſtronger inſtance of the tyranny of avarice over the heart of man, than the paſſion for *play*, which now is ſo general and prevalent, as to ſeem in a manner to have drowned every other. The

tendereſt, the ſtrongeſt connections of friendſhip and nature, yield to the force of this reſiſtleſs infatuation. The perſons who eſteem each other moſt in the world this moment, no ſooner ſitting down to this *deciſion of fate*, than they labour for each other's ruin, with all the aſſiduity and eagerneſs of the moſt inveterate hatred and revenge.

Nor is this practice confined to thoſe alone whom neceſſity may ſeem to ſtimulate to ſo deſperate a reſource. The richeſt are often found to be the moſt infatuated with this paſſion, who poſſeſſing already more than they can enjoy, yet hazard that, and give themſelves up a prey to anxiety, and often to deſpair, to indulge a fruitleſs deſire for more.

Of this laſt claſs were moſt of the company, among whom my *late* lord had ſpent this evening: ſome few indeed there were whom this folly had reduced to the former, and neceſſitated to live by their experience in the art which had been their ruin.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL *repreſents the company in perſpective Anecdotes of ſome of the moſt remarkable perſons of the party. A painter-general deceived by his own judgment and eminent taſte for* VIRTU.

I ſee your curioſity riſe at the mention of ſo ſtrange a ſcene as this muſt be. It is natural, and therefore ſhall be indulged. But as all deſcription muſt fall ſhort of it, I ſhall repreſent it to you in perſpective. Do you therefore reſolve ſenſe into imagination, *a practice not uncommon with the philoſophick mind*, and to pure abſtracted attention, ſhall my words become things, and appear as viſible to its eyes, as if they were purged with *euphraſie* and *rue*.

Obſerve now at the head of the table, that heavy looking figure, whoſe *ſaturnine* complexion gives a ſolemnity to his appearance, even beyond his declining years. This man wore out the prime of his life in indigence and hardſhips, till chance, by one ſucceſsful ſtroke in his buſineſs, gave him

him ſuch a fortune, as was deemed ſufficient merit to deſerve nobility, and entitle him to one of the firſt employments in the ſtate.

Sudden elevation makes a weak head giddy; the plain, good-natured, chearful man, is loſt in the ſolemn proud peer; who is harder of acceſs than his ſovreign, and ſeems to value himſelf on having all the hours he has ſpent in cringing to the great, repaid tenfold in attendance upon him. As to the buſineſs of his office, the whole ſyſtem of human politicks is in general ſuch a jumble of blundering and villany, that I can ſeldom bring myſelf to beſtow a moment's notice on it, ſo can ſay no more of his, than that the little attention, and leſs capacity he has for it, may moſt probably give juſt occaſion for all the murmurings that are againſt him.—But this was not the motive of my pointing him to you. It was his infatuation to the love of play, which makes him hazard that wealth which he ſo long felt the want of, in hopes of acquiring more, though he has already more than he can enjoy.

This has been an unſucceſsful night with him. Obſerve how ſtupified he looks at his loſs! extend the view but a few moments farther, and ſee how he ſits down in the com-

common hall of the tavern, among ſervants and chairmen, inſenſible of the impropriety of ſuch a place, and unable to order his ſervants to carry him home: nor is it improbable that the ſcene he has juſt quitted may remain ſo ſtrongly on his imagination to-morrow, that he may write down the rules of the game he has been playing at, inſtead of the orders of his office, as he has done once before.

Next to him, you ſee a ſhort, ruddy, chearful looking man. That is one of the deplorable inſtances of the evil of this preposterous paſſion. With every advantage of rank, abilities and fortune, did that perſon ſet out in life But alas! ſoon was the proſpect of his future happineſs and grandeur overcaſt! ſoon did gaming reduce him not only to a neceſſity of proſtituting his abilities to the prejudice of his country, but alſo of deſcending to every iniquitous myſtery of the art to ſupport his practice of it; for ſo bewitched is he to it, that he cannot deſiſt, though he now can ſcarce get any perſon to play with him, his want of money and his ſkill being ſo well known.

This has been a ſucceſsful evening with him, as you may ſee by his extraordinary flow of ſpirits: not that his natural vivacity ever fails him in the worſt reverſe of fortune.

He has won a conſiderable part of the great looſings of the perſon we have juſt been taking notice of; and though he has many demands upon him for every ſhilling of it, yet ſo far from thinking of paying one of them, he is this moment planning new ſcenes of pleaſure to conſume it all, preferring to let his creditors all be bankrupts, or even to compound with them as a bankrupt himſelf, rather than deny his appetites their full gratification.

Oppoſite to him, at the other ſide of the table, obſerve an uncommonly large-boned bulky man: that is one of the inſtances of the inſufficiency, and weakneſs of human laws, which ſtriving to remedy one evil, often make way for a greater.—That man is now advanced to the foremoſt rank of the military liſt, without one military virtue to aſſiſt his riſe, but merely and ſolely by *ſeniority!* A grievous abuſe of that inſtitution, which to prevent favour from advancing its minions over friendleſs merit, ordains, that no ſenior officer ſhall ſerve under his junior; but now, by the natural force of human perverſion, this well-deſigned regulation is made a pretext for giving command to ſuch as have no other claim to it, than (what ſhould indeed incapacitate them) old-age, and ſo keeping back

back the advance, and damping the ardour of youth.

As there is no man without ſome particular ambition, his has taken a turn, which perhaps you may think the moſt remote from his profeſſion of a ſoldier. Pictures! painting, is the ſole object of his admiration, the only knowledge he values himſelf upon. Tell him of a ſiege, or a battle, an attack or a retreat, conducted with the greateſt ſkill, and he hears you unmoved, nor will interrupt your account with a ſingle queſtion: but name *Rembrandt* or *Titian*, and he immediately gives you a diſſertation on their excellencies, and the difference of their ſchools! Tell him but of a ſale of pictures, on the day fixed for a review, and, if he is forced to feign ſickneſs to excuſe his attendance in the field, he will be at it.

Such abſurd paſſions are always the objects of artifice and impoſition. An ingenious painter of this country, not very long ſince, whoſe works would have been a credit to the beſt of foreign ſchools, but were deſpiſed at home, bethought himſelf of a way to turn this perſon's foible to ſome advantage. He made ſome deſigns, landſcapes, and other drawings, in the manner of ſome of the greateſt of the ancient *Italian* maſters, whoſe names he marked

marked upon the backs of them, in the rude characters of their times, and giving them *the caſt* of age, made them up, in an *Italian* cheſt. and by the aſſiſtance of a captain of a ſhip, had them entered at the cuſtom-houſe, as directly from *Italy*, and conſigned to a ſtranger, as from a friend there, to be diſpoſed of in *London*.

The report inſtantly reached this lover of *virtu*, who was ſo raviſhed with the thought of gaining ſuch a treaſure, that he flew to the place, and *being convinced by his judgment of the authenticity of them*, bought them all together for a very large ſum, but far ſhort of their *real* value, had they been to be diſpoſed of by a perſon *acquainted* with it.

Though this ſucceſs was very pleaſing, and uſeful to the painter, he did not ſtop here. This perſon had ſome way taken a diſlike to him, which he indulged, by running down his work. This therefore was an opportunity for revenge, not to be miſſed. He let him boaſt of his acquiſition in all companies, and diſplay his judgment in proving them to be the genuine productions of thoſe great maſters, by criticiſms which none but a connoiſeur could make: but then, as ſoon as the whole affair was ſo publick, that there was no denying it, what does the incenſed artiſt but produce the

counterparts of them all, which he had kept for the occaſion, ſo like as not poſſible to be known aſunder, and unravelled the whole affair, taking care only to keep himſelf clear of the law, by ſaying, that he had ſold thoſe things as of no value, at a very ſmall price, to a Jew.

This was a ſevere ſtroke! It overturned the only reputation which he had even an ambition of, and robbed him of a large ſum of money beſide, to recover which loſs, and divert the chagrine of the whole deceit, he has recourſe to play, which he follows with the eagerneſs you ſee.

I ſee your ſenſes fail, under ſuch an extraordinary exertion, I ſhall therefore cloſe this ſcene with obſerving, that the whole company may be characterized under the few I have pointed to you. In this view of them, I choſe to take the ſilent moment, when their buſineſs was near over, for in the height of it, the agitation of ſuch complicated paſſions would have been too horrible for repreſentation.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the myſteries of polite life. Some ſketches of the character of his next maſter, who gives him to an extraordinary perſon.*

I Promiſed to give you ſome account of my *late* lord. He was the ſon of one of the moſt diſtinguiſhed perſons of his age, who had acquired a fortune in the ſervice of his conntry, ſufficient to ſupport, with proper dignity, the nobility with which his faithful zeal was rewarded by his grateful ſovereign.

The youth of his ſon opened with ſuch promiſing hopes, that it was expected he would advance, in the ſteps of his father, to the higheſt rank of a ſubject. To facilitate theſe hopes, at his return from his travels, in which he had not only gone to ſee, but had alſo taken time to conſider the principal countries of *Europe*, with thoſe of *Africa* and *Aſia*, whoſe intereſts might any way affect thoſe of his own, or whoſe hiſtory,

tory, illuſtrated thus by obſervation, might teach him to improve the advantages of his own country, and avoid the evils which had been the ruin of others, he was placed in the lower houſe of the ſenate, with every advantage of fortune, intereſt, and opinion, to ſupport the exertion of his abilities.

He had ſcarce made himſelf known here, n his proper light, when the death of his father raiſed him into the houſe of *peers*, where he ſoon eſtabliſhed a weight that made him of real conſequence to the nation, and alarmed the fears of the miniſtry, who, as they could not confute, reſolved to corrupt him, if poſſible; for which end the deepeſt ſchemes were put in practice, to relax his morals, and embarraſs his fortune, as the preſent ſituation of both, raiſed him above their attempts.

It would require uncommon virtue to reſiſt the temptations to vice, in an age whoſe refinements have taken off every groſſneſs, and almoſt every horror of its appearance. His regard was won, by a moſt delicate application to that vanity, which is too often the ſhadow of merit, eſpecially in youth; the very perſons who deſigned to change his principles, ſeeming to give up theirs to the ſuperior force of his reaſon.

Such

Such artifice ſoon won the confidence of his unguarded heart, and inclined it to receive their opinions and advice, without farther examination; as the heat of youth, and a vivid imagination aſſiſted their deſigns againſt his fortune, the ſucceſs of which was in itſelf a ſufficient reward.

He had always expreſſed a diſlike to *play*, nor ever gave into it, but in complaiſance to company. To conquer this averſion was therefore their laſt labour, in which they found eaſier ſucceſs than they could have even hoped for. The affluence of his fortune made him above apprehenſion of loſs, and a diſdain to be excelled, even in an art he diſapproved, engaged him with a keenneſs, that ſoon made his advances in the art a pleaſure to him.

The work was now done; and a few years of his own induſtry, with the aſſiſtance of his friends, and the management of his faithful ſteward, made him willing to enter into the pay of a miniſtry, which he might, in leſs time, have over-turned.

This was his ſituation at that time; but ſome ſecret ſtruggles which I ſaw reaſon and virtue making in his heart, made me think he meditated a revolt from his infatuation, which the leaſt liberty to his natural good ſenſe could not fail to accompliſh;

an

an event, which the rapacity of *poundage* muſt haſten to his own ruin

The perſon, in whoſe poſſeſſion I left the ſcene you have juſt beheld, was one of thoſe who had been ſo ſucceſsful in initiating my late maſter into all the myſteries of pleaſure. Indeed, he ſeemed deſigned by nature to extend its empire over all mankind, making it the ſole object of abilities equal to the moſt exalted purſuits, to invent new, to improve the old methods of gratifying ſenſe, and enforcing his precepts, by an example ſo keen, and a converſation ſo captivating, as not to be reſiſted.

Appetites ſo extenſive required a large ſupport; to provide which, for fortune had ſo far frowned upon his birth, that he was but a younger brother, he was compelled to ſteal ſome moments from his darling pleaſures, and ſacrifice them to buſineſs.—The intereſt of his family, and his own abilities had raiſed him to the firſt employments in the ſtate; but as the ſole motive of his ſubmitting to the reſtraint of any application, was to acquire a fund for the gratification of his pleaſures, his haſte to arrive at that end, precipitated him into the moſt deſtructive meaſures, and made him ready and eager to embrace every opportunity of ſacrificing, or rather ſelling the intereſt

tereſt of his country for preſent private gain.

The proper application of the gifts of heaven, makes them a bleſſing. This caſt of his diſpoſition, made thoſe abilities, which under a right direction, would have been of the higheſt ſervice to himſelf and his country, a real prejudice to both, making him the ready and dangerous inſtrument of the moſt enormous crimes, that could promiſe preſent gratification to his paſſions.

In ſuch a life, there muſt neceſſarily be many diſagreeable occurrences, but they make no impreſſion on him, for his whole ſoul is ſo devoted to pleaſure, that upon the leaſt miſcarriage in buſineſs, he finds immediate relief in the reurn to that, which he can fly to, without any difficulty, the natural vivacity of his temper, that makes his converſation ſo bewitching to others, never yielding to a ſecond moment's vexation, at any one event.

As the viper bears in herſelf the antidote of her poiſon, this diſſipation of temper prevents his abilities from doing all the miſchief he otherwiſe might, by pulling off the maſk, and ſhewing his deſigns, too ſoon for their accompliſhment. The very perſons, who would gladly avail themſelves of

the venality, not daring to truſt to the inconſtancy of his diſpoſition; ſo that he ſoon loſt his greateſt power of doing evil, otherwiſe than by oppoſing, and impeding the meaſures of thoſe, whoſe ſucceſsful honeſty diſappointed his deſigns, and ſhewed the danger of them in its proper light.

You will not imagine, that my ſtay could be long in his poſſeſſion. He that very day gave me to an author, for throwing dirt on the characters of thoſe who had detected and defeated his ſchemes of leading his country into ruin.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. XVII.

*The hiſtory and character of* CHRYSAL'*s new maſter. His adventures at the coffee houſe. The fun of a modern* GENIUS *retorted upon himſelf, by the grave rebuke of a teſty veterane.*

MY new maſter was a votary of *Apollo*, in the double capacity of phyſic and letters: for the former not affording ſcope enough for his genius, he uſually dedicated his leiſure hours to the gentler entertainment of the latter, through the extenſive circle of

of which he had occaſionally ran; there not being a branch, in the wide wood of Science, which had not felt his pruning. The loweſt rudiments of the moſt vulgar arts, being, in his opinion, no more beneath the philoſophick pen, than the moſt abſtruſe heights of ſpeculation.

It muſt be owned, that in ſuch a latitude of ſtudy, he often was obliged to proſtitute his labours; but for this he had the ſolid conſolation, that his gain generally roſe, in proportion as his ſubject ſunk, the caprice of the world paying beſt, that is, buying moſt eagerly, what it affected to decry moſt. Nor is this to be wondered at, a looſe tale, or a receipt for cooking a new diſh, being better adapted to general taſte, than a moral eſſay, or metaphyſical ſpeculation.

From his patron's levee, my maſter went directly home, and undreſſing into his cap and ſlippers, aſcended to his ſtudy, and took a meditative turn or two, revolving in his mind the many grievances that called upon him for redreſs, from the ſucceſs of that morning.

At length, burſting into a rapture, he cried, 'I'll think no more! Be the wants 'of yeſterday forgot! thoſe of to-morrow 'will come too ſoon, without the anticipa-'tion of thought! I cannot pay all I owe!

'I

'I cannot provide all I want! Hence then 'vain care! I'll depend on fortune, and 'myſelf, for a greater ſupply, another 'day, and indulge my genius with the 'preſent.'—Big with this heroick reſolution, he gave orders for dinner, and then ſending for his beſt ſuit home, dreſſed himſelf in all his pride, and went to the coffee-houſe to look at the papers.

The pleaſure of *my* company had given ſuch a flow to his ſpirits, naturally high, that he ſoon drew the attention of the coffee-room, the greater part of the company gathering in a circle round him, to hear his remarks on the publications of the day, which he threw out with the confidence of one, who thought his opinion the eſtabliſhed ſtandard of all writing; and at the ſame time, with a ſprightlineſs that made his very impudence and abſurdity entertaining.

While he was thus running on, in the torrent of harangue, a *veterane*, whoſe only employment, for many years, was talking over the actions of his youth, and compaparing them to the miſtakes and loſſes of the preſent times, no longer able to contain his rage, at having his audience drawn from him, in the midſt of his daily tale, roſe up with an execration that ſhook the room, and calling

calling for his cloak and cane, 'This is 'not to be borne (exclaimed he). Here, 'waiter, take for my coffee! I ſhall ſtay 'in ſuch a place no longer: is this the 'land of freedom, forſooth! that a man 'muſt be diſturbed in his diſcourſe, and 'not have liberty to ſpeak where he ſpends 'his money. Had I but the command 'here, I'd ſettle other orders; every pra-'ting puppy ſhould not preſume to inter-'rupt his betters: things are like to go 'well with us, when matters of the higheſt 'conſequence can be broken in upon by 'noiſe and nonſenſe. This is freedom 'with a vengeance!'

The look and accent with which theſe words were pronounced, were too terrible for my maſter to encounter; both nature and experience having given him ſo lively an apprehenſion of danger, that his readieſt preſence of mind was not always able to conceal it. He was, therefore, cut ſhort at once, and could ſcarce muſter ſpirits to throw a wink at ſome of thoſe about him, as the *man of war* looked another way.

But the triumph was not ſo abſolute over all the company, one of whom, reſolving to have ſome *fun*, cries out, 'Pray doctor 'proceed; you are juſt, in the moſt in-'tereſting part of your ſtory: the colonel

'could

'could not mean to interrupt you; he is 'too fond of telling his own ſtory, to give 'another ſuch pain: go on, you ſhould 'not be frighted at a flaſh in the pan.'

'Frighted indeed' (replied the doctor, gathering courage when he ſaw himſelf ſupported) 'at what, I wonder! at the ſight 'of what old age can ſink to! no, no! 'I am not ſo eaſily frighted! I leave that 'to your antiquated heroes, the exploits of 'whoſe youth have exhauſted their cou-'rage: I mean no offence;—but to go on, 'as I was ſaying, *the diſcovery of the ſleep of 'plants accounts in the cleareſt manner*' — 'Hold, doctor (cries the other) that was not '*as you were ſaying*, you were telling us of 'the nobleman, who caught his coachman 'in bed with his lady, one morning, when 'he came home, ſooner than uſual from 'the tavern, pray how did ſhe bring her-'ſelf off.

'Oh, was that it (replied the doctor) 'faith I had forgot; the fury of *Mars* had 'like to have made a gap in the annals of '*Venus*: ha! ha! ha! why ſhe made no-'thing of it, but laughing in his face, moſt 'heroically, *tit for tat* my dear is but fair 'play (ſaid ſhe) while I ſay nothing at 'your ſtaying out night after night with

'*Kitty*, you cannot in conſcience blame my 'comforting myſelf a little with *John*.'

The colonel ſtool all this while convulſed with rage, too big for utterance, but the univerſal laugh that followed the doctor's laſt words, rouſing him from his *reverie*, he advanced to him, 'Whom do you dare to laugh at, *poul-* 'tron? (ſays he, taking him by the 'noſe) whoſe courage is exhauſted? but 'you are beneath my notice or reſentment, 'farther than this'--(then ſpitting full in his face, he turned to the gentleman who had ſet the doctor on, and who now began not to like the joke any farther) 'But 'for you, Sir, you perhaps may be a gen- 'tleman, and worth calling to a further 'account, will you pleaſe to walk up ſtairs 'with me, and let me know what you 'meant by a flaſh in the pan?'

The ceremonies of attending him, on ſuch an expedition, would not have been much more agreeable to this gentleman, than to my maſter, but he had more command of his fear, and was well uſed to bring himſelf off with a joke. 'Sir (ſays he) 'you need not give yourſelf the trouble of 'going up ſtairs, for what I can as well do 'here! By bidding the doctor not be 'frighted, I meant at the circumſtances of

'his

'his own ſtory, for juſt as you interrupted
'him, he had ſaid, that the lord ſnapped a
'piſtol at his lady, which had flaſhed in
'the pan! That was all, Sir! I could ne-
'ver mean it to offend you, or ſhew a doubt
'of your courage, which I have heard you
'relate ſo many ſurprizing inſtances of, ſo
'often, and always ſo invariably alike,
'that they muſt be true.'

'Sir! Sir! have a care (replied the co-
'lonel) I do not deſire to be troubled with
'ſuch a gentleman, as I perceive your are!
'But let me tell you, Sir, that I have ſeen
'a man's face broke, before now, for
'wearing ſuch a ſneer! As to the ſtories I
'tell, I am ſatisfied they will be of no ſer-
'vice to you, nor raiſe the leaſt emulation
'in a man who can ſtay lounging about
'town, when his country has occaſion for
'him. I was younger than you, when I
'went a voluntier with lord *Cutts*, under
'the duke of *Marlborough*, nor was I urged
'by want. I had a good eſtate, Sir, ſuf-
'ficient to ſupply me with what you call
'the pleaſures of life, if I could have
'thought any thing a pleaſure that was not
'attended with honour. Sir, I loſt this
'hand at *Blenheim*, and this leg at *Malpla-*
'*quet!* But why do I tell you ſo! you will
'preſerve your hands to take ſnuff; and

'your legs, to walk the park, the proper 'ſcene of your campaigns.'—With which words the doughty heroe marched away to his chariot.

Though this lecture was rather too grave for the taſte of the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, it gave great pleaſure to the unconcerned part of the company, and to none more than my maſter, who had wiped his face, and began to come to himſelf, as ſoon as he ſaw the danger directed another way.

Before the gentleman could ſpeak, the doctor came up to him, and ſaid, 'I am 'ſorry, Sir, that you ſhould have drawn 'this ſtorm upon yourſelf, upon my ac-'count! But I bore the worſt of it! You 'heard but the whiſtling of the winds, the 'ſhower fell on me! 'tis well though, that 'what ſuch dotards do, is not eſteemed 'an affront!'—'An affront, Sir (replied 'the other) I do not underſtand you! I 'hope you do not inſinuate, that there was 'any affront offered to me, or that I was 'in the leaſt concerned in what was ſaid, 'only to you!'—'Not at all, Sir (retur-'ned the doctor) not at all, Sir! the colo-'nel's diſcourſe was all directed to me, to 'be ſure! and I hope to profit by it, thus 'far, that I will never interrupt him again!

—And

—And with theſe words, he left his former friend the field, not caring to enter into any farther altercation with him, for fear he might take it into his head to vindicate his character on *him*, as *he knew his man*.

Such ſlight rebuffs made not a moment's impreſſion on the temper of my maſter: he was uſed to, and made nothing of them! A good dinner, and a bottle of wine, ſent him in the evening, in a critical enthuſiaſm, to the theatre, where all action fell ſhort of the ſublimity of his conception, all expreſſion, of the warmth of his feeling, as he fully explained, to every company in the coffee-houſe, while he ſet at public ſupper, after the play was done.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*Some further account of* CHRYSAL's *maſter. His converſation and engagements with two bookſellers. Some of the ſecrets of the trade.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

EXtenſive as theſe ſcenes were, they ſhewed not my maſter in his proper light. His peculiar ſphere was his ſtudy, where the inconſiſtency of his works ſhewed

the *chaos* in the brain, from whence they ſprung. *Chaos* did I ſay? *Chaos* is order to the confuſion there. For ſurely the diſcordant ſeeds of ſuch ill-matched things were never jumbled together before. An auctioneer's library is a regular ſyſtem, in compariſon to his head. Such an heap has neither beginning nor end. No fixed point to commence a deſcription from. I ſhall therefore wave ſuch an attempt, and only ſtrive to convey ſome idea of it, from its effects.——At five next morning he aroſe to his labours, the firſt of which was to conſider, what he ſhould begin the day with, ſuch was the multitude he had in hand. But what reaſon could not determine, chance muſt, and he took them as they happened to lie, *panegyrick*, *libel*, *phyſick*, *divinity*, *cookery*, *criticiſm*, *politicks*, *ballads*, *botany*, &c. &c. &c. In all of which he indefatigably worked the taſk of the day, changing his ſubject with as little concern as he did his paper: and though ſuch rambling prevented his ever getting deeper than the ſurface of any ſubject, yet it ſhewed the extent and volubility of his capacity, and that it wanted only regular application, to any ſcience, to be eminent in it.

As

As ſoon as he had finiſhed, and the *devils* had carried away his labours, he was juſt deſcending to go out, when a bookſeller came to pay him a viſit. After much ceremony on one ſide, and little civility on the other, Mr. *Vellum* thus accoſted my maſter: 'Well, Sir, I ſee there is no depen-
'dance on the word of an author! I thought
'I was to have the anſwer to yeſterday's
'pamphlet laſt night! Somebody elſe will
'do it, and then I ſhall be finely off.'

'Upon my honour, Sir (replied my
'maſter) I aſſure you I ſhould have done
'it, but ſome buſineſs'—*What buſineſs can*
*'you have, that ſhould interfere a moment with*
*'your engagements with me?*'—'Dear Mr.
*'Vellum* do but hear me! There is a noble
'lord going to be divorced for impo-
'tence; I juſt got an hint of the matter,
'the night before laſt, and ſo waited upon
'his lordſhip's gentleman yeſterday morn-
'ing, with whom I have a particular inti-
'macy, having ſerved him in my profeſ-
'ſion more than once; and from him I
'have learned the whole ſtory, and now
'leave me to ſet it out! I'll engage to
'make a noble eighteen-pennyworth of it
'at leaſt by to-morrow morning.' '*Why,*
*'there may be ſomething in that; but in the mean*
*'time you ſhould not let other matters cool!*'

 —'Never

—'Never fear; pray how did yesterday's 'pamphlet do?'—'*Why tolerably well; but* 'the *scandal was so gross, that I was almost* 'afraid.'—'Aye! aye! never fear me for 'an home cut! never fear me!'—'*But I hear* 'nothing *of the exercitations!*'—'No; your 'devil carried away the sheet above an hour 'ago!'—'*Then there's that book you promised* 'to re-write; *some one else will do it, and pre-* 'vent *you.*'—'Never fear, I have just laid 'down a scale for the stile; beside, I have 'altered the title already, and that you 'know is the principal thing.'—'*That is* 'right! *Now you speak of titles, I want half a* 'dozen *directly! this very day if possible!*'— 'Tis rather too late now; but where are 'the books?'—'*In the lumber-garret, where* 'they *have lain these seven years.*'—'That's 'well; they are forgot by this.'—'*Forgot!* 'why *they were never known! the author was a* 'man *of fortune, who printed them at his own* 'expence, *but I prevented the sale, and so had* 'them *for the publishing! Ha! ha! ha! be-* 'side *a good consideration for the buying up, at a* 'double *price, what I had* (NOT) *sold of them;* 'so *that it was not a bad job; and now he is* 'dead, *they may safely come out, under new titles!* '—*It will be too great a delay to wait to see* 'them, *but here are the old titles, which I sup-* 'pose *may do.*'—'Why aye; they may do! 'but

'but I cannot poſſibly write them this 'evening; you know I muſt anſwer that 'pamphlet I wrote laſt week, before it is 'forgot: I have an anſwer ready, that will 'make a noiſe; I expect it will raiſe a cu-'rioſity, that will ſell another edition of 'the pamphlet. I left opens for ſuch re-'torts upon the characters I praiſed in that, 'and have ſuch pieces of ſecret hiſtory to 'hit them off with, that I'll engage for the 'ſucceſs—.' *Aye, ſecret hiſtory, and ſtories 'of family misfortunes, and ſuch like, may do 'ſomething! But I had like to have forgot 'the main buſineſs of my coming. There is an 'account of the death of an eminent divine, this 'morning: could we not vamp up a volume or 'two of ſermons for him, think you? He was 'ſuſpected of hereſy and atheiſm, and you know, 'that would make any thing in his name go off'.* 'Egad, a good thought! and particularly 'lucky at this time: for as I have been 'engaged in divinity lately, I know the 'weak ſides of the queſtion, and a little in-'fidelity will be a refreſhment to me. It 'ſhall be done! the ſermons ſhall be ready 'without delay! Have not you got ſome 'by you that did not go off: let me have 'one of each, and I'll interline it to ſave 'time; but will you publiſh them yourſelf? 'I thought you had given up ſermons!'—

'*Myſelf! no! no! I'll ſend them in to Mr.* Vampe: *I'll reſerve the confutation of them to myſelf!*'—'Egad, another good thought; the confutation will do better! and I'll take care to make it a ſmart one, and play the devil with the author; ha, ha, ha.—But, Mr. *Vellum*, your coming here this morning prevented my waiting on you: it is a great while ſince you promiſed to ſettle with me. You ſhould conſider, Sir'—'*What pray, good Sir, ſhould I conſider? that I have ſupported you!*'—'Supported me, Mr. *Vellum!* Sir, I have a profeſſion'—'*I know you have, Mr. Doctor; a profeſſion indeed, in which his majeſty's ſubjects may bleſs God that nine in ten of you would ſtarve, if they had not ſome other way of getting bread, beſide that*'—'Mr. *Vellum*, you know this way of talking ſignifies nothing. It is a long time ſince we have ſettled any account, and there are a great many articles! Let me ſee: aye, here they are! and a long liſt it is! NINETEEN PAMPHLETS, with ANSWERS to FOURTEEN of them, NINE RAPES, SIX MURDERS, FIVE FAST and FOUR FUNERAL SERMONS, THIRTY-SIX ESSAYS, TWENTY-TWO TITLES, FOUR QUARTO VOLUMES RE-WRIT, SEVENTEEN WILLS, TWENTY-FOUR'——'*Go on, Sir, go on!*

'*but*

'*but when you have done look at* THIS, *and*
'*then talk to me of an account*; *here is your*
'*bond for* 15 *l. which is due these two years*;
'*and it is very likely, to be sure, that you*
'*should leave it out-standing so long, if you had*
'*any account to set off against it! but I am glad*
'*I know you*; *and since you talk of accounts,*
'*observe that I demand my money, due on this*
'*bond, which I will have, and when you have*
'*paid that, it will be time enough for me to set-*
'*tle accounts with you, so Sir your servant.*'—
'Mr. *Vellum*, good Mr. *Vellum*, do not be so
'hasty! I did not mean to give you offence'
'—*Accounts indeed! have I not supplied you*
'*with paper above the weekly allowance we*
'*agreed for, and yet you will talk to me!*'—
'Mr. *Vellum*, I may be in the wrong; let
'matters stand as they are: but you have
'not told me what size you would have this
'affair of the divorce, that I mentioned to
'you just just now'—'*There it is now*; *that*
'*is your way always*; *you know my easy temper,*
'*and that you can bring me down when you*
'*please: why if the story will bear much paint-*
'*ing, and the circumstances are very strong and*
'*plain, I believe you may draw it out to two*
'*shillings*; *and to encourage you, and show you*
'*that I mean generously by you, when you have*
'*finished* that, *and the* Answer, *and the* Ser-
'mons, *and the* Confutations, *and the* Titles,
'*and the* Exercitations, *I will give you up your*

'*bond, and then we will begin an account on*
'*fair even terms. But I am in haſte; I have*
'*three or four other gentlemen to call upon; I*
'*ſhall depend upon your promiſe, and ſo good*
'*morning.*' —— 'Good morning to you,
'good Mr. *Vellum* — Damn'd, impoſing,
'grinding ſcoundrel; but I'll be quit with
'you, for all your tricks (ſaid the doctor,
'as ſoon as Mr. *Vellum* was out of the
'room) and teach ſuch ſtupid raſcals to
'attempt outwitting men of genius.

When I conſidered the nature and importance of my maſter's demand, I could not but wonder at the eaſe with which he took a denial, and the joy he expreſſed at Mr. *Vellum*'s departure; but the myſtery was ſoon cleared up, by the arrival of Mr. *Pamphlet*, another of the trade, almoſt the very moment *Vellum* went down ſtairs, and whom I ſaw by his reception, my maſter expected.

If I was before ſhocked at the cruelty with which I thought *Vellum* treated my maſter, I was now no leſs ſo, at the part *he* acted with *Pamphlet*, with whom he bargained over again for the very ſame *ware* which he before promiſed to *Vellum*, and flattered him with an aſſurance of having his buſineſs done, that is, the anſwers and

re-

re-writing, before *Vellum* poſſibly could, for they were mortal enemies.

The diſcourſe between theſe was much the ſame as the former, only that it was concluded in a different manner; *Pamphlet* giving my maſter a couple of pieces to keep him in mind of his engagement.

I was utterly at a loſs to think how he meant to act between theſe two; when he put an end to my doubts by this ſoliloquy.

'So, now I have diſpatched you two, the 'day is my own; keep my engagements! I 'will, with both alike. Let me ſee, 'there is nothing in it, but a little trouble 'of writing: I can divide the hits between 'both anſwers according to the opens I 'have left on purpoſe, and ſo ſend them 'to both at the ſame time; only to divide 'the alterations in my ſcale of ſtile, and 'make a ſecond title, and ſo 'tis done. 'This method that I have found, of uſing 'a feigned name, makes it all eaſy. Well, 'let thoſe who were born to fortunes, 'ſpend them in ſloth and ignorance. I have 'an eſtate in myſelf, that can never be ex-'hauſted. I am obliged to nature only 'for my abilities, and carry the fountain 'of honour and fortune in the fluency of 'my genius.'

He

He then deſcended from his aërial citadel, and going out *to viſit* his patients, *changed* me at the coffee-houſe, where I was immediately borrowed at the bar by an officer, who was going to dine with his general, and wanted money to give his ſervants.

End of the First Book.

BOOK

# BOOK II.

## CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the gentleman of a general. Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of riſing in the world, and the happineſs of dependance. Influence of* CHRYSAL's *maſter, with his curious manner of ſupporting it.*

YOU may judge that my ſtay with this owner was but ſhort: he gave me directly to the general's *gentleman*, with a letter to be preſented to his excellency next morning, as he could not find courage to ſpeak to him in perſon.

The caſe of this perſon, though not uncommon among men, I own affected me. He was the ſon of an officer of diſtinguiſhed merit, the ſervices of whoſe life had, in the 80th year of it, been rewarded with the command of a regiment, and the hopes of his ſon crowned with a pair of colours; which, on the death of his father, in ſix months after his elevation, he found to be his

his whole inheritance; the fees of office, and the equipage for his new rank, having exhauſted all the ſavings of the old man's ſubaltern frugality. ——— The moſt exemplary duty, in five warm campaigns, had advanced the ſon to the rank of a lieutenant, when the exaltation of the perſon to whom he now applied, raiſed his hopes to a company, which was vacant in the regiment, and his right by ſeniority: for ſuch was his ignorance of mankind, that he built ſanguine expectations on the very reaſons that ſhould have deprived him of any, *the obligations of the perſon, to whom he applied, to his father*, who had taken him up, the poor friendleſs orphan of a young enſign, educated him at his own expence, procured him his firſt commiſſion, and afterwards lent him the money with which he had purchaſed his company: a debt which the ſon was weak enough to expect a friendſhip from, though it, and much more, had long ſince been cleared at play.

But though the character of the ſon, and the general's known intimacy with the father, in a manner obliged him to promiſe him his friendſhip, yet nothing was farther from his thoughts than ever to do him any real ſervice; as he imagined that would be acknowledging the obligations which his very

very attendance ſeemed to upbraid him with: a dinner now and then being the only favour he ever had or ever meant to give him. You may perhaps have experienced the miſery of a dependant's dining at the table of his patron, where the tortures of *Tantalus* are aggravated by anxiety of giving offence. I ſhall therefore haſten over this, and the other ſcenes of that evening, which were but the common occurrences of military greatneſs, and ended in a deep debauch, as ſoon as all but the *choſen few* had retired, to come to the concluſion of my *late* maſter's ſtory, in which my *preſent* bore a conſiderable part.

As ſoon as the general had ſlept off the fumes of his wine, and awoke next morning, my maſter's hour of influence arrived, which he never failed to improve. After a prelude of coughing and ſpitting, the ſcene opened thus, '*Who's there? William!*' —— 'Sir,' — '*William, was not I very drunk laſt night? my head achs moſt confoundedly.*' — 'Your excellency was a little cut, but you 'broke up much the ſtrongeſt of the com-'pany.' — '*Aye, I wonder at that, I ſpend 'myſelf with talking, when I begin to go, and 'that helps a man on damnably: that ſtory of 'the battle, where I was taken priſoner, is a 'bottle in my way always.*' — 'That foreign

'gen-

'gentleman, who never ſpeaks a word,' has a great advantage then'—'*Aye, ſo he has; but he is a damned honeſt fellow, and a very good companion; he always fills a bumper and never ſpeaks a word.—But my head.*'—'Perhaps your excellency had better take ſomething'—'*No, I have taken too much already; though that's right; give me a glaſs of the old Geneva; I am to go to council to day, and muſt ſettle my head—Aye, that will do, I am much better now; there is nothing like a hair of the old dog*'.

This converſation continued till he was ſeated to breakfaſt, when my maſter turned to a new topic. 'I was very ſorry (ſaid he) that your *excellency* happened to ſit in laſt night, as Mrs. *Motherly* was to call'—'*Why that's true, William; I did not think of one engagement when I made the other; and when ſhe called me out, I was not in cue; I was too far gone. We old fellows are not ſparrows; the ſpirit is often willing, when the fleſh is weak; ha, ha, ha*'.—'Your *excellency* is pleaſed to be merry, but to my thinking, the youngeſt fellow of the age has not more vigour'—'*Aye, William, do you think ſo indeed? But why do you think ſo William?*'—'Becauſe your *excellency* always chuſes ſuch green things: now I ſhould think a ripe woman would

'be

'be better; I am ſure ſhe would give leſs
'trouble.'—'*Ha, ha, ha, why that's your*
'*taſte*; *but youth is mine*; *and while I have*
'*powers* (*and I do not think mine quite gone*
'*yet*) *I will pleaſe my taſte. But what had*
'*Mrs. Motherly laſt night?*'—'A very fine
'girl as your *excellency* could wiſh to ſee'—
'*How old?*'—'About ſixteen.'—'*Pſha, mel-*
'*low pears*; *I loath ſuch traſh.*'—'But Mrs.
'*Motherly* ſaid ſhe could ſwear ſhe was un-
'touched. She came from the country
'but yeſterday, a relation of her own: the
'poor thing knew nothing of the matter,
'and thought ſhe came to be hired for a
'laundry-maid.'—'*Why that is ſomething*;
'*but I wiſh ſhe were younger*'—'If your *excel-*
'*cellency* pleaſes but to wait a little, I have
'one in my eye that will ſuit your taſte ex-
'actly; a ſweeter child is not in all En-
'gland'—'*Aye, good William* (ſpitting once
or twice, and wriggling in his chair) *Aye,*
'*that is ſomething*; *but how old?*'——'Juſt
'ten, and finely grown'——'*Right, the*
'*right age. That's true! I'll ſpeak this very*
'*day for that place for your brother. Tell him*
'*to come to-morrow*; *I will not be refuſed.*'—
'We are both obliged to your *excellency*
'for all your favours'——'*But when ſhall I*
'*ſee this girl? Give Motherly ſome excuſe with*
'*her ripe fruit. Sixteen! ſixty! pſha!*'—

'Sir

'Sir I ſhall go about it this very evening. 'A letter from captain *Standard*; will your 'excellency pleaſe to read it'?——*Damn 'him and his letter: throw it into the fire! 'What would the unreaſonable ſcoundrel have? 'Did I not give him his dinner yeſterday? Has 'he not been introduced to good company at my 'table? If he had any induſtry or ſpirit, with 'theſe advantages, he would have learned 'to play, and made his fortune as others do. 'Since he grows troubleſome on encouragement, 'I'll ſtarve him into better manners. Bid the 'porter ſtrike him off the dinner liſt.*'—'I beg 'your *excellency*'s pardon, for mentioning 'him; but the manner I have heard you 'talk to him made me imagine you really 'did deſign to provide for him; and he 'ſays there is a vacancy in the regiment 'juſt now'—'*Damn his impudence! a vacancy 'indeed! I ſhall never think there is a good one 'till he makes it at Tyburn.*'——'I beg your 'excellency's pardon: I ſhall never mention 'him more. Would you have me go 'about the *child* this evening; it is a little 'angel to be ſure'——'*This inſtant if you 'think you can ſucceed.*'—'I ſhall try at any 'rate: but there is one obſtacle'—'*What is 'that? you know I never grudge money on theſe 'occaſions. How much will do?*'——'That 'is not the difficulty here; money will not

'do,

'do, and I hardly know what will'——— '*Money not do? Why what the devil can it be, that money will not do?* — 'I ſcarce know how to mention it to your *excellency*, but the little cherub is neice to captain *Standard*, his ſiſter's daughter, and while he is in the way, there will be no poſſibility of getting at her'——*Is that all? He ſhall join the regiment to-morrow.*' ——'But then he will leave ſuch an impreſſion of your unkindneſs upon his ſiſter, if there is nothing done for him, after waiting ſo long, that it will be impoſſible for any perſon belonging to you to gain acceſs.'—'*What would you have me do? I never will bear to have the fellow get a company in my regiment: that would be acknowledging the obligations he has the impudence to ſay I received from his father; I never will bear it.*'—'I beg your *excellency*'s pardon; I did not preſume to point out any ſuch thing, and indeed the poſſeſſion of ſuch a *baby* (though my eyes never beheld her fellow) is not worth your giving yourſelf ſo much trouble about; ſhe is quite too young, though ſo well grown'—'*You ſay ſhe is but juſt ten! and ſuch a beauty!*' ——'I wiſh your *excellency* could but ſee her, for I am unable to deſcribe her' —'*But cannot ſome way be found out, beſide fixing this fellow under my noſe?*

'*noſe ?*'—— 'That was juſt what I was 'going to take the liberty of hinting to 'your *excellency*. There are ſeveral gen-'tlemen of fortune, in the troops juſt or-'dered to *America*, who have no liking to 'the voyage. Now I think, with ſubmiſ-'ſion, that you would oblige ſome of them, 'with an exchange into your regiment, 'and let captain *Standard* go in his place. 'And this will oblige him too; for I have 'often heard him wiſh to go there, in 'hopes of riſing, when they come into 'action.'—'*A good thought! and ſo I will. 'Let the fellow go to* America *and get ſcalped; 'his hot head wants to be cooled: ſuch poor 'wretches as he are juſt fit to be tranſported 'there. Tell him to prepare directly! I long 'to be rid of him. But when ſhall I ſee the 'dear little creature?*' — 'In twenty-four 'hours after he is gone, I'll undertake to 'have her eating ſugar-plumbs, and ſob-'bing in your boſom. It cannot poſſibly 'be ſooner, for you know the captain's 'ſpirit, and that he would cut the throat 'of a prince, who ſhould diſhonour his 'family, as he calls it.' — '*Aye, damn his 'ſpirit, that is true; that is what has kept me 'civil to the fellow ſo long: I know he has all 'the romantic madneſs about honour, and ſuch*

'*ſtuff*;

'*ſtuff, that made his fool of a father live and* '*die a beggar*'.

By this time his *excellency* was dreſſed, to go to council, for which another dram ſettled his head.

I *ſee* your ſurpriſe, at the brutal behaviour of the maſter, and the infamous deſigns of the man. The former is beyond aggravation; but the latter were only an honeſt artifice in favour of his friend, who had no ſuch neice in the world.

## CHAP. II.

*The hiſtory of* MR. WILLIAM. *Some odd circumſtances in his conduct accounted for. By a progreſſion equally polite and frugal,* CHRYSAL *comes from his poſſeſſion into that of a celebrated female.*

WILLIAM was a ſon of the regiment, born of one of the general wives that followed it. He was about the ſame age with *Standard*, who had taken ſuch a liking to him, when they were boys, that he ſhared his allowance with him, gave him his old cloaths, and taught him what he learned at ſchool. A natural acuteneſs of genius improved

theſe

theſe advantages ſo well, that *William* could read and write enough for a gentleman; dance, fence, and ſcrape on the violin, before his friend's power of ſerving him was put an end to, by the death of his father; and his ſpirit and appetites were too great, to accept of his offer, of the beſt ſupport an enſign could ſpare him, to maintain him as a *cadet*, till his merit ſhould get him a commiſſion. But though he would not accept, he did not forget the offer, nor make his obligations a cauſe of hatred, now that it was in his power to make ſome return; a way of thinking, that proved the meanneſs of his birth; for quitting the barren paths of military honour, he had turned his genius to the more thriving profeſſion of a footman; through the various aſcents of which, he had riſen to his preſent rank, of his *excellency*'s gentleman; in which he had the unfaſhionable gratitude to return the favours of his former benefactor in the above manner, which his experience and knowledge of his maſter's temper convinced him to be the only one he could hope to ſucceed in. As to his promiſe about the child, he was in no pain about that, there being no perſon who could contradict whatever excuſe he ſhould pleaſe to give.

There

There is one circumſtance, which I ſee puzzles you, in the character of this man, and that is his taking *me* from his friend, when he muſt be ſenſible how badly he could ſpare ſuch a ſum. But you muſt conſider the power of nature when ſtrengthened by habit.

From his mother, *William* had inherited venality, which the bribery of vails, in his preſent profeſſion, had confirmed beyond all poſſibility of correction; ſo that it was no more in his power to refuſe a guinea when offered to him, than to change his ſtature or complexion. And attention to this obſervation would take off the wonder, and eaſe the world from the trouble of the exclamations that are daily made againſt the rapacity of perſons in office, for as ſuch are generally taken from the claſs of *William*, it cannnt be expected but they muſt act from the ſame natural principles with him.

I *ſee* the depravity of human nature, when ſtripped of diſguiſe and ornament, affects your unexperienced heart too ſtrongly. But conſider, that *we* ſee things as they really are, and to repreſent them otherwiſe to you, would invert the deſign of my miſſion, and confirm, rather than remove

the prejudices that lead aſtray the mind of man.

However, this conſolation I can give you, that the vices I have already drawn, and may hereafter draw to your view, are not particular to this age or country: they are the weeds which in every age and clime, have always, and always will, over-run the human heart.

Nor is it juſt to call them vices (though in compliance with the language of men I do call them ſo) which *perhaps* are but * neceſſary parts of this univerſal ſyſtem; and though in a particular inſtance, and viewed by themſelves, they may appear deformed, yet when thrown into the general repreſentation of things, they may have their beauty and uſe, if only to diverſify the ſcene: and with reſpect to men in particular, be as † advantagious to the community as they are prejudicial to individuals.

But to return to my maſter *William*. Beſide the advantages of education, he had ſuch from nature, that he was not only the

---

* From hence it ſhould ſeem, the hint of a late treatiſe, on the origin of evil, was borrowed or elſe dictated by the ſame ſpirit.

† Fable of the bees.

moſt

moſt accompliſhed *gentleman*, but alſo the handſomeſt fellow of his time; an happineſs of which he availed himſelf ſo well in the *polite* world, that he was the favourite of all the *compliant* fair, who ſhared with him the pleaſures they only ſuffered from his ſuperiors for hire.

Of this I ſaw ſufficient proof that very evening, when he went to an aſſignation with the moſt celebrated courteſan of the age; who ſacrificing avarice to pleaſure, gave orders to be denied to every body, and ſhut herſelf up with him, to give a looſe to joy for the evening.

This was a ſcene too ſenſual for a ſpirit to deſcribe: I ſhall therefore only ſay, that their fatigue and waſte of ſpirits were recruited with the higheſt delicacies and richeſt wines, and the pauſes of joy enlivened with the recital of the adventures of their profeſſions, heightened with the moſt poignant ridicule of thoſe whoſe folly was *their* fortune.

Before ſatiety could pall their pleaſures, time ſummoned them to buſineſs. The fair, to prepare for the reception of her *friend*; and *my* maſter to wait on *his*; when, to conclude the evening with proper gallantry, he preſented me to the maid at the door.

I was a good deal ſurpriſed, at being received with leſs emotion by this portreſs of *Venus* then I had ever found before; the ſight of me having always raiſed joy. But this was ſoon explained, when, on returning to her miſtreſs, ſhe threw me on the table, and received a ſhilling in exchange. An inſtance of that methodical œconomy which by many ſmall ſavings makes up for one large expence, and extracts profit even from pleaſure.

The joy of the miſtreſs ſeemed to make amends to my vanity for the indifference of her maid, and promiſe me the full poſſeſſion of her heart, but I ſoon found myſelf miſtaken, and that her love for me was only while I was the property of another; for no ſooner did I become her own, than ſhe threw me careleſsly into her purſe, and turned her thoughts immediately to the acquiſition of more. But though I loſt the greateſt part of my power over her, by coming into her poſſeſſion, I ſtill found ample room in her heart for my abode.

The apartments were ſcarce got in order, and my miſtreſs new dreſſed, when her *friend* appeared, to whom ſhe flew with all the appearance of rapture. But however he might be deceived, the difference was plain to me, between the joyleſs careſſes ſhe

ſold

ſold to him, and the extaſy ſhe ſhared with my late maſter, the glow of whoſe kiſſes yet reeked upon her lips. Nor was this ſtrange: the ardor of her lover met her half way, and communicated as much fire as it received; but with her *keeper* the caſe was quite otherwiſe: all the advances were to come from her; all her careſſes were a duty; nor were the tendereſt ſhe could beſtow, able to warm him to the leaſt return.

You wonder, that a perſon in ſuch circumſtances ſhould be at the expence and trouble of *keeping* a miſtreſs, whoſe extravagance was to be equalled only by her inſolence. But this is only a ſmall inſtance of the tyranny of faſhion: and how will your aſtoniſhment be encreaſed, when I tell you, that this very man, in the prime of life, was remarkable for the coolneſs of his conſtitution, and now in its decline was married to a beautiful young lady, whoſe reſentment at his conjugal neglect roſe ſo high, as to charge it to inability, and perhaps to return it with infidelity,

Whether this was really the caſe, and that he *kept* my miſtreſs to hide it, as a failing tradeſman ſets up a coach, or whether the paſſion remained, but ſo feebly ſupported, as to require the laſcivious blan-

diſhments of a proſtitute, I cannot determine, as I was never in his poſſeſſion, to take a view of his heart.

## CHAP. III.

*The manner in which* CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs received and took care of her friend. How ſhe employed herſelf while he was aſleep. Her management of him next morning.*

IT was about two in the morning when my miſtreſs received him drunk and ſtupified with play, at which he had loſt deeply that night. On his coming into her room, he threw himſelf into a chair, without ſaying a word, or ſhewing the leaſt ſenſibility of her careſſes; where after ſome time, he fell faſt aſleep, which my miſtreſs no ſooner perceived, than calling her maid to undreſs and roll him into bed, 'Here '*Jane* (ſaid ſhe) take my place, by this 'heap of mortality. I'll ſtep to ——— 'ſtreet; perhaps the company may not be 'all gone. Never fear, I'll inſure you 'from a rape! He wants nothing in a bed-'fellow but to keep him warm, and you 'may do that, while I paſs my night better than

'than in nurſing his infirmities; I'll be 'home before he ſtirs'.

*Jane* obeyed her miſtreſs, who ſlipped into a chair, and went away directly to an houſe, where ſhe uſed to piddle away her leiſure hours with any chance cuſtomers, rather than be idle.

About five ended this ſcene, in the rites of which my miſtreſs bore a diſtinguiſhed part. I ſhall not attempt to deſcribe theſe myſteries: they were too groſs for my relation, as well as your conception, in your preſent mortified habit. She then returned home, and laying her *pure* body in her maid's place, beſide her *friend*, who had not ſtirred yet, her fatigues ſoon threw her into a ſleep, as ſound as his.

It was noon before theſe fond lovers awoke: the firſt was my miſtreſs, who enraged that any thing which bore the name of man, ſhould ſhew ſo little ſenſibility of her charms, reſolved to teize him with endearments, which, as he was ſeldom in a humour to return in kind, he never failed to pay for in a more ſubſtantial manner.

When ſhe had awoke him with her toying, the *ſyren* thus began her ſong:
'How can my deareſt ſleep ſo long, when
'his little girl lies languiſhing by his ſide!
'O turn, and let me lay my head on that

'dear boſom.'—*Ha! what is it a clock?* (replied the lover, yawning, and rubbing his eyes)—'Alas I know not! I have told 'ſo many tedious hours, that I've forgot 'them: but what is time to us, who only 'live to love?'—*Paſt 12! I muſt be gone!* '*ſome buſineſs*'—'Buſineſs; leave that for 'duller ſouls, who have no taſte for plea-'ſure: can you leave love and me for buſi-'neſs?'—*I am ſorry I happened to overſleep* '*myſelf, my dear; I believe I was bewitched, to* '*drink ſo much; but we'll make it up another* '*time.*'—'So you ſay always; but that other 'time will never come: but I will not be 'ſerved ſo; I am fleſh and blood, what-'ever other people may be; and you your-'ſelf know, it is not for want of *friends*, I 'keep myſelf up, thus like a nun, for you; 'and all, I do not know for what!'——*Is* '*the girl mad? Do not I give you every thing* '*you want, every thing you deſire?*'——'No, 'nor any thing I deſire! I deſire now—— 'So, you will get up and leave me: I will 'not be uſed thus: you have got ſome 'other woman: but I here give you fair 'warning, that I will be even with you! 'Sir George was here yeſterday; and ſo 'was the young lord—but I would not ſee 'either of them: and I am well requited 'now: but I know where to ſend to them:

'I

'I will not be made a fool of every way,
'for nothing; and ſo you may *ſleep* where
'you pleaſe, I care not.'——'*Come my dear,*
'*let us not fall out for nothing; you have not*
'*ſhewn me the diamond ear-rings you got laſt*
'*week.*'——'No, my dear, they are not come
'home.'—'*I thought you told me they were*
'*finiſhed when I gave you the money to pay for*
'*them.*'——'They were ſo; but when he
'brought them home, I did not like them.
'The jeweller told me, they were not ſo
'fine as thoſe he made for your lady, ſome
'time ago; ſo I ſent them back, and or-
'dered him to make me a pair, that ſhould
'be as good as her's at leaſt.'——'*Not good*
'*enough, child! were they not to coſt* 150*l.*'—
'And what is 150*l.*—Sir *Richard* gave his
'girl a pair that coſt 500; but if you think
'theſe are too dear, you are not obliged to
'pay for them: there is another, who will
'be glad to do it.'—'*And pray what are theſe*
'*fine ones to coſt?*'—'Why—only—but kiſs
'me firſt——only 200*l.* But then I have
'beſpoke a necklace with them'—'*Zounds,*
'*a diamond necklace!*'—'And what mighty
'matter is a diamond necklace? Pray has
'not your *wife* one? But I ſee how it is;
'you think any thing good enough for me;
'and nothing good enough for her: but

'every one does not think so: I am not at
'a loss.'—'*Well, you sawcy little minx; and*
'*what do they all come to?*'—'Another kiss,
'and I'll tell you:—why—don't frown;
'or I won't tell you at all;—only 500 *l.*'—
'500 *devils*; *that's more than my wife's cost*
'*by* 100.—'And do not you love me
'100 times better than your wife? I have
'given up thousands for you. But, as I
'said before, you need not pay for them,
'if you do not chuse it: there are others
'who will: I see I am slighted; and I de-
'serve it, for slighting so many good of-
'fers: but I will not always be a fool!'—
'*Well, my dear, for this one time I will humour*
'*you: give me the pen and ink: but you must*
'*not expect that I shall ever gratify your extra-*
'*vagance so far again:*'—'I thank you, my
'lord; I shall not trouble you again this
'great while. But what is this? 350 *l.*!
'you have made a mistake, my lord; I
'told you 500 *l.*'—'*Well child, did I not*
'*give you* 150 *to pay for the other pair?*'—
'Yes, my lord; but that was not to pay
'for this pair though, you know these are
'dearer.'—*But that and this will.*—'I am
'afraid not.'—'*How so, child; do not* 150 *and*
'350 *make* 500?'—'Indeed I am a poor ac-
'countant; but I know it will not do.'—

'*No!*

'*No! why ſo; I do not underſtand you!*'—'I'll 'kiſs you firſt, and then I'll tell you.'—'*Pſha; ceaſe fooling; I am in haſte; I muſt 'go to court; and have ſcarce time to dreſs: 'where is the* 150 l. *?*'—'There (kiſſing 'him)'—*Where?*—'Gone, as that kiſs is; 'all gone, and only the reliſh left behind, 'to give an appetite for more.'—'*Infernal 'jade!*' (aſide)—'What do you ſay, my 'lord?'—'*That I cannot, will not bear ſuch 'extravagance.*'—'I am glad I know your 'mind, my lord: then if you do not, 'ſomebody elſe will, who will not make 'ſuch a ſtir about trifles.'—'*Well, give me 'that bill.*'—'No, thank you, my dear.'—'*Why ſo?*'—'For fear you ſhould be a 'bold boy, and not return it. If you 'pleaſe to give me the other 150*l.* I'll get 'the necklace and earings; if not, this 'will ſerve for ſome other uſe.'—'*Damnation! and then I muſt give it to her all over 'again*' (aſide).—'Well, my lord; you ſaid 'you were in haſte, and ſo am I.'—'*Give 'me the pen and Ink: there it is you little termagant: but once more let me caution you 'againſt ſuch extravagance for the future.*'—'And once more, let me tell you, my lord, 'not to give yourſelf ſuch airs: extravagance! they that will have delicacies, 'muſt pay for them: and if you think the

'price too dear, there are more cuſtomers
'in the market; and ſo, my lord, like it,
'or like it not, I will be ſupported; and
'more than that, what I want in pleaſure,
'ſhall be made up in profit: let wives
'ſave, who may be the better for the ſa-
'vings, *our* buſineſs is to make hay while
'the ſun ſhines.'—'*Come, my dear; let us*
'*have no diſputes: you have the money now;*
'*next time we will clear off the other ſcore: give*
'*me a kiſs, I'll call in the evening, and take a*
'*diſh of tea with you: farewell*'——'Good
'morrow——(*after he is gone*) for an old
'impotent, poor-ſpirited letcher, that muſt
'he treated like a dog, to make you know
'your duty. What fool would ever be at
'the trouble of behaving well to any fel-
'low, when ſhe can, ſo much better,
'mould him to her pleaſure by ill uſage?'

CHAP.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. IV.

*The hiſtory and character of* CHRYSAL's *miſtreſs. She gives him to a noted matron. Some account of his new miſtreſs, and her manner of managing her family.*

THIS principle ſhe acted up to, for two days that I was in her poſſeſſion, without any other variation in her conduct, than juſt what was neceſſary to work on the various tempers of her lovers, making no real difference between them, except it was, that ſhe always uſed thoſe worſt, who uſed her beſt.

I have often told you, that ſenſuality is diſagreeable to a ſpiritual being. I therefore longed to quit this miſtreſs, the ſucceſſion of whoſe amours was ſo conſtant and quick, that I was aſtoniſhed how nature could afford a fund of love for them all, in ſo young a creature, for ſhe was not 20 years old.——I ſee you have a curioſity to know the hiſtory of this young votary of Venus, in which you think there muſt be ſomething extraordinary: but you are deceived;

ceived; it contains nothing but common occurrences.

She was the daughter of tradeſpeople, in moderate circumſtances, whoſe fooliſh fondneſs, becauſe ſhe was a pretty, ſmart child, gave her an education above her rank, in hopes of her making her fortune by marriage.

This raiſed the vanity, natural to the female heart, ſo high, that ſhe deſpiſed her own ſtation, and not being ſo fortunate as immediately to climb to the one ſhe deſired, by the way propoſed, ſhe fell an eaſy victim to the firſt ſeducer who promiſed it, in any other.

Thus the accompliſhments, by which the injudicious tenderneſs of her parents meant to raiſe her into a rank higher than their own, became the cauſe of her falling into that of the loweſt of all human beings: a fall, though deplorable in itſelf, yet unaffecting to her, as the time, in which her mind ſhould have been formed to virtue, was given up to the nouriſhing that vanity which proved her ruin; ſo that ſhe is abſolutely inſenſible of the wretchedneſs of her condition, and never has the purſuit of her moſt infamous profeſſion diſturbed by a moment's remorſe.

I told you of her ſpending the hours that were unemploy'd at home, at an houſe in ——— ſtreet, where ſhe was always ſure of buſineſs. Though this venerable manſion was dedicated to the myſterious rites of unreſtrained love, yet as the prieſts of all temples expect to live by the offerings made at them, her conſcience would not permit the prieſteſs of this to break through an ordinance, ſo long eſtabliſhed, and ſhe exacted fees from the votaries of her's: not indeed a tythe, indiſcriminately from all, whether they received benefit from their devotion, or not; but always in proportion to the fruits they reaped.

At this ſhrine was I offered, the third night of my being in the poſſeſſion of this young devotee, when the plenteouſneſs of her gain, from a multitude of lovers, ſeemed, to her piety, to merit ſo rich a return.

I now entered into a much more extenſive ſcene than my laſt, the proſtitution of which made but a ſmall part of the buſineſs of the profeſſion. But what I have related in the hiſtory of my late miſtreſs, ſhall ſuffice for that branch, nor ſhall I give more than ſome outlines of the horrors of the reſt.

My

My new miſtreſs had originally been of the ſiſterhood of my laſt, who having fallen a prey to luſt, almoſt in her infancy, and having no beauty, nor any thing but extreme youth, to recommend her, as ſoon as that was worn out, neglect obliged her to apply to other buſineſs for bread, and her natural turn determining her to this, as well as the outrageous virtue of the *undiſcovered* part of her own ſex, excluding her from every other, ſhe changed her occupation, from *yielding*, to *providing* pleaſure, in which her ſucceſs was ſo great, that ſhe ſoon became the moſt eminent of her profeſſion.

It was near five in the morning, when I changed my ſervice; and buſineſs being ended, my late miſtreſs having reigned *ſole miſtreſs* of the night, and ſeen out all the company, there remained nothing to do, after ſhe went home, but to ſee the inmates to their truckle-beds in the cock lofts, where ſtripping off every part, not only of the finery, but even of the comforts of dreſs, they were crowded three or four together, to keep each other warm, under a ragged coverlet, upon a bare mattreſs, where their ſhudderings and groans made a jaſt contraſt to the ſpirited wickedneſs of their converſation ſome hours before.

This

This was always the fate of thoſe who were not ſo ſucceſsful in the evening as to earn the price of a better bed, above the fees of the houſe, and hire of cloaths.

Theſe happy few were treated with fondneſs, while they ſquandered their poor *peculium* in a drop of cordial to ſettle their heads, and were lodged in apartments ſuited to their purſes; though the night before perhaps they had experienced the ſame fate with their ſiſters above ſtairs, and knew they muſt expect it again the next, if unſucceſsful in their buſineſs.

When matters were thus ſettled, this happy family diſpoſed themſelves to take the beſt repoſe which diſeaſe in mind and body would permit.

An active ſpirit diſdains reſt. Though debauchery had anticipated old age, in the conſtitution of my miſtreſs, yet her application to buſineſs, made her refuſe nature even neceſſary indulgence. She was ready to go out before ten that morning, when the modeſt decency of her dreſs and appearance were ſuch as drew the general good opinion, and would almoſt deceive the *devil* himſelf, on whoſe moſt favourite ſervice ſhe was going.

CHAP.

## CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL'S *miſtreſs pays a viſit to the laſt place ſhe could have been ſuſpected for going to. She meets a young lady, with whom, by an artifice, ſhe goes home. Her ſchemes to enſnare the lady.*

IF a judgment were to be formed for the whole day, from the manner of beginning it, my miſtreſs ſhould have ſpent her's moſt happily; her firſt viſit being to church, where the piety of her behaviour was an edification to the devout matrons, who having nothing to do at home, meet there regularly, to compare their aches and dreams of the night before, and enjoy the innocent amuſement of a little goſſiping over the affairs of their neighbours.

But her devotion waſted not itſelf ſo fruitleſly: her induſtry had formed expectations of drawing conſiderable advantage from it, and ſo anticipating futurity, and making ſure of the reward here, which others waited for in another world.—The immediate motive of her devotion, this morning, was to ſee a young lady with whom

whom ſhe had commenced an acquaintance at this church, and who conſtantly attended divine ſervice there. You are ſurprized how ſhe could think of going to ſuch a place, on ſuch an errand; but the wolfe roams about for prey every where, and is often moſt ſucceſsful, where his attempts are leaſt ſuſpected: though I muſt rob her induſtry of the merit of deſign in the firſt introduction to this affair.

Going through *St. Martin's Lane* one morning, about a month before, ſhe was ſo ſtruck with the appearance of a lovely young creature, in widdow's-weeds, who was going into the church, that ſhe followed her; where the fervency, with which ſhe poured out her ſoul in devotion, gave ſuch a luſtre to her beauty, and made it ſhine ſo lovely through her grief, that my miſtreſs immediately marked her for her *liſt*, not doubting but ſhe ſhould be able to turn her diſtreſs to ſuch advantage, as ſhould bring her into her meaſures, and make her beauty yield her a rich return for her pains, from ſome of her cuſtomers. If you conſider the nature of woman-kind, you will not wonder at this inſtance of the profligacy of my miſtreſs. They are ever in extremes; either the beſt or worſt of human creatures.—From church ſhe dogged her to her lodging,

ing, in a little court, where ſhe lived with a poor, but honeſt family, in ſuch privacy, that no one in the neighbourhood could give any account of her.

Real virtue ſhines with a luſtre that dazzles the moſt confirmed vice, and keeps it at an awful diſtance. My miſtreſs, hardened as ſhe was in all the ways of ſin and impudence, dared not to go directly to her without ſome buſineſs or introduction: but as ſhe had not either, her ready genius prompted her to win her good opinion, under an appearance of religion, and then an acquaintance would come eaſily.

She was not deceived in her expectations: a few morning's conſtant attendance at church, and the exemplary warmth of her devotions, ſtruck the eye, and opened the heart of unexperienced innocence to the acquaintance ſhe wiſhed for, which ſhe did not fail to improve, by the ſame arts, to ſome degree of intimacy.

In this ſituation they were, when ſhe went, but without any appearance of deſign, to meet her this morning at church, as uſual. As they came out together, my miſtreſs, turning with her fair *friend*, ſaid ſhe had ſome buſineſs into *Long-Acre*, and aſked her, if ſhe went that way, to which the young lady innocently anſwered, that ſhe did,

did, and ſhould be glad to walk with her.

As they walked together, my miſtreſs turned her converſation on the wicked ways of the town, and particularly the many baſe deſigns that were laid to inſnare unwary innocence, adding, that all the pleaſure which ſenſuality could give the moſt luxurious heart, muſt fall infinitely ſhort of what ſhe felt at that very moment, in the deſign ſhe was then going upon, of relieving the diſtreſſes of a worthy family.

She had timed her diſcourſe ſo as to ſay theſe words, juſt as ſhe came to the entrance of the court, in which ſhe knew the widow lived, when, feigning to ſlip, ſhe fell all along, crying out, as in the utmoſt agony, that ſhe had wrenched her ankle.

The lady, raiſing her with the greateſt tenderneſs, expreſſed her concern for the unhappy accident, and deſired ſhe would ſubmit to be helped into *her* lodgings, which fortunately were at the next door, where, though ſhe could be but poorly accommodated, ſhe might be more at her eaſe, than in a more ſumptuous place, and ſhould have all the care in her power. This was juſt what my miſtreſs had ſchemed for, who courteouſly accepting of the offer;

made

made a ſhift to limp in, without any other aſſiſtance than her's.

It raiſed my indignation to ſee the tenderneſs with which the beautiful young creature pulled off her ſhoe and ſtocking, and chafed her ankle, thrown away upon ſo unworthy an object, as it did my abhorrence to hear the counterfeit ſhrieks and groans of my miſtreſs, and the aſſurance with which ſhe attributed the ſwellings cauſed by debauchery, to this immediate accident.

This affrighted the young lady ſo, that ſhe in a manner forced her to ſend for a ſurgeon, which with much intreaty ſhe yielded to do, but it muſt be for a *friend* of her own, a gentleman who lived a conſiderable way off, at the polite end of the town, for ſhe could not think of letting any *common low-lived* fellow come near her.

Upon this, a porter was directly diſpatched for her *own* ſurgeon, and in the mean time, as ſhe began to grow eaſier, ſhe recovered her ſpirits, and renewed the converſation that had been broken off by this accident.

'I was telling you, my dear friend (ſaid 'ſhe) for ſo I ſhall ever call you from this 'moment, your kindneſs having com-'pleated the conqueſt which your beauty

'had

'had before made of my heart, I was telling you, that I was going to visit a family this morning, where I promised myself the highest joy that a human heart is capable of feeling, in lightening the distress of the virtuous, by sharing with them some of that wealth which heaven has abundantly blessed me with, and which can justly be applied to no other use, than making this grateful return to that goodness which bestowed it.

'But my heart was too elate with the thought, and I receive this accident as a caution from heaven not to flatter myself with any thing so strongly for the future. But though I could not have this pleasure myself, the benefit shall not be delayed to them. I will make you my *almoner*; an office that I know will suit the goodness of your heart. You shall give this packet, which will put an end to all their distresses'

'Oh madam! your good opinion is the greatest honour to me (replied the lady) and I hope I shall never forfeit it, especially in this commission, which I shall undertake with the most sincere joy; but pray dear madam who are the persons to whom I must dispense your goodness?'

'That

'That's true, my dear (returned my mi-
'ſtreſs) I ſhould give you ſome account of
'them, that you may be the better able to
'judge of the joy I feel in ſerving them.
'It is the widow of an officer, who has
'been killed in this war, and left her with
'three poor babes, deſtitute of every ſup-
'port, but the allowance of the govern-
'ment, which, wretched as it is, and only
'aggravating miſery by barely prolonging
'life under it, is often gaſped for by the
'hungry mouth in vain, where intereſt is
'wanting to procure the immediate relief
'of it, as was her unhappy caſe, ſo that
'they muſt have actually periſhed for want
'of food, had not providence brought them
'into my knowledge, ſeemingly by the
'greateſt accident, about ſix months ago,
'ſince when, I have myſelf afforded them
'the neceſſary comforts of life, and have
'alſo made ſuch intereſt for them, with
'ſome of my friends, that I have here got
'them a grant of a penſion, on the *Iriſh*
'*eſtabliſhment*, ſufficient to bring up the
'children, and make the remainder of the
'mother's days happy; for, my dear, I
'never do any thing by halves—Good God,
'child! what is the matter with you?
'what do you weep ſo for?——

'*No-*

'*Nothing, dear madam* (replied the lady) '*nothing; I only ſympathize in the diſtreſs of* '*the poor widow*'. —— 'But, my dear, 'that diſtreſs is now as an end.'—— '*O* '*madam, let me carry her the bleſſing! let me* '*not delay her happineſs a moment! Who* '*knows but her heart is this minute burſting* '*with the dreadful apprehenſions, of want for* '*herſelf, and her dearer infants!* — 'With 'all my heart madam; but you will pleaſe 'to order a chair to be called to carry me 'home, when you go; for I cannot ſtay '*here* alone.' — '*Dear madam, forgive my* '*rudeneſs; I beg your pardon, pray forgive* '*me: the diſtreſs of the widow put every* '*thing out of my head; indeed it did; pray* '*excuſe me.*' —— 'Excuſe you, my dear, 'I honour the heart that feels another's woe; 'you ſhall go directly; you ſhall be the 'meſſenger of glad tidings to them. But 'my deareſt young lady, give me leave to 'tell you, that I fear you have not an- 'ſwered me ſincerely; I fear your tears 'flow from ſome other cauſe, than mere 'ſympathy; ſpeak, my child! does any 'thing affect your own heart? Can I any 'way be ſerviceable to you? Command 'me freely, and make me happy in ſerv- 'ing one for whom my heart has con- 'ceived ſo tender an eſteem! Speak as

'you would to your own mother, and 'wrong not my friendſhip with a doubt.'— 'O *madam*, *madam!* (replied the mourner, 'as ſoon as ſobbing permitted utterance) '*I have no mother to make my complaint to*; '*I am the wretched widow you have deſcribed!* '*A widow without ſupport, without friends,* '*or any other hope, than juſt in heaven!*'— 'And heaven will raiſe you friends, my 'deareſt child! heaven has raiſed you a 'friend in me! You ſhall be *my* child! I 'look upon you as my own! as a gift 'from heaven, from this moment! You 'ſhall leave this place this very day! it is 'not fit for *my* child! I will take a lodging 'for you, near myſelf, till *my nephew*, 'who is lately come to town to ſee me, 'goes home; and then you ſhall live with 'me for ever.'

Saying theſe words, ſhe threw her arms round her deſtined victim, and wiped away the tears that flowed down her cheeks, while a variety of paſſions filled her tender heart almoſt to burſting.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VI.

*The history of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected person. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the house, and resolves to punish the bawd.*

WHEN she had recovered herself a little, my mistress thus resumed her lore; 'Weep not my dearest child, all 'will be well. And have you any dear 'little infants too?'—'*Oh no! my wretch-*'*ness, thank heaven, is all my own!*'—'But 'may I, my dear, ask your name, and the 'circumstances of your story! I would 'know all, that nothing may be unre-'dressed.'———'*You are all goodness, ma-*'*dam! My story, alas, has few circum-*'*stances, and they are all distresses! I lost* '*my mother while I was yet a child: my fa-*'*ther left me in the country to the care of a* '*governess, the wife of his chaplain, who* '*educated me in the sentiments of piety and* '*virtue. When I was scarce fourteen, I re-*'*turned the love of her son, the most deserv-*'*ing and most lovely of his sex, who was two*

'*years older than me: but young as we were,*
'*we concealed our paſſion, till my father ob-*
'*tained him a commiſſion in the army; when,*
'*on the regiment's being ordered to America,*
'*I yielded to his fears of loſing me, and con-*
'*ſented to a private marriage, which was*
'*ſoon diſcovered by a letter's falling into my*
'*father's hands, who in his rage, turned my*
'*huſband's father and mother, and me, out of*
'*doors, nor would ever ſee us more. A ſmall*
'*vicarage afforded us a preſent ſupport. My*
'*mother-in-law ſoon died; the ſuſpicion of*
'*her having betrayed the confidence of my fa-*
'*ther, and been inſtrumental in my marriage,*
'*breaking her heart; as did the account of*
'*my huſband's death, his father's. I then*
'*was left quite deſtitute; and have ſince ſup-*
'*ported a wretched being, by my work, which*
'*the honeſt woman of this houſe takes in for*
'*me, without the leaſt hope of relief in this*
'*world, till your goodneſs has, this day taken*
'*compaſſion on me.*'——'And what is your
'father's name, my dear'—'*That I have*
'*never yet revealed, as I would willingly hide*
'*the diſgrace, my diſtreſs may be thought to him;*
'*but with you I need not uſe that caution; his*
'*name is*'——

Juſt at this word, the *ſurgeon*, who had been ſent for, to my miſtreſs, entered, and preſented a new ſcene.

At the firſt ſight of this perſon, the young lady gave a great ſhriek, and ſwooned away. The gentleman ſtood a moment ſtupified with aſtoniſhment, when turning haſtily to my miſtreſs, 'Is this the lady?' (ſaid he) —'Aye, and a lovely one ſhe is (anſwered 'ſhe) but help me to raiſe her up, when 'you will ſee her better; ſhe has been juſt 'telling me her ſtory, and the grief of it 'has over come her! it is a moving one; 'and ſhe muſt be our own.'———

'*Oh, my child! my child!*' (exclaimed he in a tranſport) and ſpurning my miſtreſs from her with his foot, raiſed her himſelf, and leaned her head upon his boſom, kiſſing her, and almoſt ſmothering her with his tears. '*Oh my poor child! what have you 'eſcaped! what have you endured!*'

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the ſituation of my miſtreſs at this ſcene. She ſaw the error ſhe had been guilty of, in introducing a woman to whom ſhe was a ſtranger; and was aware of the danger, with which the horror of ſuch an interview on ſuch an occaſion, threatened her. While therefore the father ſeemed wrap'd in an extaſy, that made him as inſenſible as his daughter, ſhe thought it her beſt way to retire from the firſt burſt of his anger, and forgetting her ſprained ankle, was going directly away;

but he perceived her intent, and calling her with a voice, that nailed her to the ground, 'ſtir not, upon your life (ſaid he) I will 'have this whole myſtery cleared up.'

His daughter, juſt then, opening her eyes, and finding herſelf laid upon her father's boſom, love, reſpect, duty, fear, and joy, filled her heart with ſuch a variety of paſſions, that ſhe ſunk under their weight, and ſwooned again.

This embarraſſed the father almoſt to diſtraction, till the woman of the houſe coming in, with her aſſiſtance ſhe was at length recovered, for my miſtreſs was ſo terrified, that ſhe did not dare to approach her.

As ſoon as the lady had lightened her heart by a flood of tears, ſhe threw herſelf at her father's feet, unable either to look up, or ſpeak to him. Moved with the mute eloquence of her grief, and melting in the warmth of nature, he raiſed her from the ground, and ſpoke to her in theſe words. 'Be comforted, my child! I am! I will 'be your father! But tell me what has 'paſſed between you and this vile woman!' —'*Oh ſir, is ſhe not my beſt, my only friend?* '*Has ſhe not reſtored me to your love?*'—— 'Have a care child! ſhe your friend! 'then you are loſt beyond recovery in-

deed!

'deed! She is a reproach to her ſex! to 'human nature!'——— '*Oh ſir! how can* 'that be? *did ſhe not bring you here, to me &* 'does not that ſhew her virtue, *and compaſſion* 'to my diſtreſs'—'Compoſe yourſelf a little,' 'child! it is true, ſhe brought me here; 'but tell me, I charge you, on what terms 'ſhe told you, I was to come; and how ſhe 'came to intereſt herſelf in your affairs! 'Fear not, but ſpeak the truth.'

On this ſhe told him the whole of her acquaintance with my miſtreſs, and by what accident, and in what character ſhe imagined he had been ſent for; but that, as ſoon as ſhe ſaw *him* enter the room, ſhe thought my miſtreſs muſt have been acquainted with her ſtory, and had taken this method of introducing her to him, in hopes the ſurprize, and ſight at her diſtreſs, might operatate on his compaſſion.

Truth forces conviction. He was ſatisfied with the account ſhe gave him; and taking her again in his arms, 'I have found 'you again, my child (ſaid he) and I will 'never loſe you more! Be the errors of 'your youth; be my ſeverity forgotten! 'From henceforth you are *my* child, and I 'will be *your* father! as to that vile wretch, 'know, that her whole acquaintance, with 'you, was ſought with a premeditated de-

'ſign of betraying you to ruin. She told
'me the whole, nearly as you have done;
'and encouraged by your diſtreſs, of which
'ſhe had gotten ſome general hints, but
'ignorant who you were, ſhe laid the
'ſcheme of this pretended accident, to
'get admiſſion into your houſe; for ſhe
'well knew where you lived; and then ſent
'for me to a place I had appointed, that I
'might come and ſee you, under the ap-
'pearance of a ſurgeon; that if I liked you,
'I might have the preference of her inte-
'reſt in you: for ſo deep had ſhe laid her
'ſcheme, that you could not have eſcaped
'her: the trial would have been too great
'for human fortitude! and this moſt exe-
'crable myſtery of iniquity did ſhe under-
'take for the paultry reward of 50l. which
'I muſt take the ſhame upon myſelf to
'own, I had promiſed her, little imagining
'that I was bargaining for the ſeduction of
'my own innocent child. But I ſee, I ac-
'knowledge the hand of heaven in this
'whole affair, that has thus opened my
'eyes to the danger of ſuch a licentious
'courſe of life, and made the recovery of
'my child the means, and the reward of my
'converſion!

'Weep not, my dear; juſtly may you
'turn your eyes with deteſtation from ſuch

'a

'a fiend: But I ſhall take care that ſhe 'meets a juſt reward; while you prepare 'to go home with me, for I will not leave 'you a moment in this ſcene of horror.'—— 'Oh, mercy, mercy, my lord! (cried my 'miſtreſs) have mercy on me! nor over-'whelm with your anger a wretched crea-'ture, whoſe remorſe is a load too great to 'bear.'—'Away vile wretch (replied he, 'in a rage) nor dare to ſpeak another word! 'and here fellow (calling to the porter who 'had directed him to the houſe) bring me 'the pariſh conſtable.'

While the porter went for him, my miſ-treſs, wretched now indeed, her guilty fear magnifying her danger, ſtood trembling, but afraid to eſſay his pity with another word.

After he had walked a turn or two about the room, his daughter entered, and with her the woman of the houſe with her little effects, which were ſoon packed up; at the ſight of them his countenance ſoftened: 'well, my dear, (ſaid he to his daughter) 'I ſee you are ready to come with me; 'but I muſt wait a moment to do juſtice to 'the wretch who brought me hither. 'Plead not for her! I would not have you 'ever ſue to me in vain, again; and any 'thing in her favour I cannot yield! But

'my juſtice ſhall not be only ſevere, nor
'confined to her alone. You have ſaid
'that this honeſt woman has been a friend
'to you! ſhe ſhall be rewarded. Here,
'good-woman, is the ſum of money I was
'to have given this vile creature for my
'daughter, in another ſenſe. Take it, as
'the reward of your honeſty and kindneſs
'to her; and call on her, every year of
'your life for the ſame ſum.

The poor woman took it, with a reverence, but was unable to ſpeak her gratitude, her heart was ſo full, while his daughter dropped ſuddenly on her knees, and raiſing her hands and eyes to heaven, exclaimed in rapture, *Oh pour thy bleſſings, heaven, on his head, who thus diſpenſes happineſs on all who merit it.*——As ſhe ſaid theſe words, the conſtable came, into whoſe charge his lordſhip gave my miſtreſs, to be taken to a juſtice of the peace, whither he appointed to follow her; and then handed his daughter into a coach, in which he took her directly home.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VII.

*The addreſs of* CHRYSAL'*s miſtreſs, and civility of a conſtable. She arrives at the juſtice's, and is ſifted and ſoftened by his clerk, and terrified by his worſhip.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

AS ſoon as this happy couple were gone, my miſtreſs recovered her ſpirits, and ſmiled with contempt, at a danger ſhe had often gone through before, without harm. 'And ſo (ſays ſhe) maſter conſtable; I am 'given in charge to you! and for what 'pray? But I am no ſuch novice, as to yield 'myſelf a priſoner, till I ſee proper autho-'rity to hold me; therefore, Sir, I ſhall 'wiſh you a good morning: if you pleaſe, 'you may go tell his lordſhip, that I was 'not at leiſure to wait for him, at the ju-'ſtice's; and becauſe you may be dry af-'ter your walk, here is a crown to drink 'my health.'

'I thank you miſtreſs (replied the ma-'giſtrate, taking the money) but in the 'mean time, you muſt come! I am ſorry 'I cannot let you go.'——'*Cannot let me go!*

'*pray, Sir, where is your authority to keep* '*me?*'——'Here, miſtreſs! (producing 'his ſtaff)'——'*But your warrant?*'—— 'Oh! as for that, I'll make bold to do 'without one this time; and take you to 'the juſtice on my own authority, and his 'lordſhip's requeſt; and ſo, miſtreſs, you 'had better come along, for I am in haſte; 'you may have a coach if you pleaſe.'—— '*Aye, ſo I will, to carry me home; and here's* '*ſomething for you to pay the coachman* (put 'ting a guinea into his hand)'——'Tis 'very well, miſtreſs, I will ſee you ſafe 'home, to be ſure, if you deſire it; and 'the juſtice gives you leave; for to him 'we muſt go directly.'——'*Then give me* '*my money; and be aſſured you ſhall anſwer for* '*this falſe impriſonment.*'——'Your money, 'miſtreſs! why, aye! ſo I will, if I do not 'earn it.'——'*Then let me go home this* '*moment.*'——'No, no, miſtreſs! that I 'cannot do, till you have been to viſit his 'worſhip; and then I will ſee you ſafe 'home, if he gives me leave, and drink 'your health into the bargain; and that 'was what you gave me the money for: 'come, come, miſtreſs! one of your trade 'ſhould know better things, than to aſk 'for money back again! Have I not

'ſhewed

'ſhewed you all the *civility* in my power? 'Do you think I would ſtand preaching 'with you here this hour for nothing! 'come along, the coach is at the door.'

I *ſaw* you were ſurprized at the addreſs and turn of expreſſion in my miſtreſs's converſation with this young lady, before the arrival of her father, as above her ſphere; but nature had given her a capacity equal to any thing, and her intercourſe, with the *polite* world, had gained her an eaſe of behaviour, and elegance of expreſſion, that made every condition of life ſeem natural to her. As to the ſtory of the family, whom ſhe was going to relieve, ſhe had actually prepared one of her confederates to have acted that part, ſo that the lord might juſtly ſay, her deſign was laid ſo well, that it was next to impoſſible for her to miſs of ſucceſs. For by this deceit ſhe would have gained the young Lady's confidence, to receive favours from her, and when ſhe had her in her debt, ſhe thought ſhe could make her own terms.

As ſoon as my miſtreſs and her conductor were come into the antichamber of juſtice, the clerk recognizing her, addreſſed her thus: 'Good-morrow, miſtreſs—Pray 'what has got us the favour of your com-'pany? You have been ſo great a ſtranger

of

'of late, that I was beginning to think we 'had loſt you,'——'Pray Sir (ſaid ſhe) 'let me ſpeak a word with you in the next 'room.'——On which he ordered her to be ſhewn in, and only waited to aſk the conſtable, by whom, and for what ſhe was ſent there, who was able to give him no other anſwer, than that the lord had ordered him to bring her, and ſaid he would follow himſelf directly.

Having got this *full* information, the clerk came into the room to my miſtreſs, and told her, with a look of importance and concern, that he was ſorry to ſee her, on ſo bad an account.——'So bad an ac-'count, Sir? (ſaid ſhe) why! pray what 'do you think I am brought here for? 'nothing in this world! they can charge 'me with nothing but intention; and I 'hope that is not puniſhable by the law!' ——'I hope it will appear ſo (replied he) 'but (ſhrugging up his ſhoulders) my 'lord has ſent a meſſage here, that has 'another appearance!'——'*And pray, Sir,* '*what does my lord charge me with?*'—— 'You'll excuſe my revealing the ſecrets of 'a privy counſellor! He will be here too 'ſoon, I am afraid, to tell you himſelf.'

Verſed as my miſtreſs was in all the wiles of man, the look and manner of his ſaying

theſe

theſe words, alarmed her conſcious fears. ‘ Pray Sir (ſaid ſhe) what has his lordſhip ‘ ſaid? or, if you do not think proper to ‘ tell me that; at leaſt, you can direct me ‘ how to make the beſt defence againſt ‘ his deſigns! I ſhall not be ungrateful! ‘ you know I never was.’——‘ Why that’s ‘ true, madam (replied he) and indeed I ‘ ſhould take great pleaſure in ſerving you, ‘ and getting you out of this *hole*, but my ‘ lord, you know, is a great man, and can, ‘ in a manner, do what he pleaſes with ‘ poor people.’—‘ *Pray, Sir, can I ſpeak a* ‘ *word to the juſtice?*’——‘ I fear he is en- ‘ gaged juſt now; beſides, it is ſo long ‘ ſince he has ſeen or heard from you, that ‘ I believe you muſt expect but little favour ‘ from him.’——‘ *Why that is the very thing* ‘ *I would ſpeak to him about; and believe me,* ‘ *it was my buſineſs out ſo early this morning,* ‘ *till I was delayed by this unlucky accident.*’ ——‘ As for that matter, you know you ‘ may ſay any thing to me, as well as to ‘ him, and I can tell him.’——‘ *That is* ‘ *true; why, all I have to ſay to him at pre-* ‘ *ſent, is to beg his acceptance of theſe five gui-* ‘ *neas for his paſt favours, and his advice how* ‘ *to get out of this ſcrape; and pray do you* ‘ *take theſe three for your trouble. I am ſorry* ‘ *I have no more to offer, but really the times*

‘ *are*

'*are very bad, and little or no money ſtirring*
'*among the gentlemen; beſide, all my ladies*
'*have been very unlucky of late, and the doc-*
'*tor, you know, muſt be always paid in hand.*'
——'I am ſorry things go ſo badly with
'you; I will ſpeak to the juſtice, and let
'you know what he ſays, and you may
'depend on my friendſhip and intereſt at all
'times; though I am afraid this is a very
'bad affair. I will go to him directly, and
'return to you, as ſoon as poſſible.'

I here left my miſtreſs to her meditations, having been one of the pieces ſhe had given to the clerk. You may imagine I was glad to leave ſuch a ſervice, though I could not promiſe myſelf much pleaſure, beſide variety, in the exchange, from what I had already ſeen of that, which I was entering into.

The juſtice was in his office, buſied in examining the informations of ſome of his people, who had made ſome lucky *hits* the evening before. On a wink from his clerk, they were all ordered to withdraw, when reaching *me*, and four more of my brethren, to his worſhip; 'here, Sir (ſaid he) five
'guineas from Mrs. ——!'——'*So*
'*then*, (replied he) *ſhe has thought pro-*
'*per to come at laſt.*'——'To come?
'no, no, Sir! ſhe has been brought, or
'elſe

'elſe I believe you would have hardly ſeen 'her.'——'*The ungrateful jade: but what 'is the matter now?*'——'I really cannot 'well tell; nor does the conſtable know 'any more, than that my lord —— or-'dered him to bring her, and ſaid that he 'ſhould follow himſelf.'—'*My lord? then 'I muſt be ready to receive him properly: He 'is a great man: quick! reach me my green 'velvet cap, red ſlippers, and new gown, and 'open half a ſcore of thoſe books, the largeſt of 'them, and lay them on that great table, as if 'I had been referring. There! now I look 'like a juſtice! and bid thoſe gentry, I was 'ſpeaking to, go backwards till my lord is 'gone: He muſt not ſee ſuch faces; they might 'prejudice him againſt us; and he is a great 'man: ſo! now I'll open the* NEW JUSTICE, 'and his lordſhip may come as ſoon as he 'pleaſes.'

Juſt as all things were thus prepared for his lordſhip's reception, in proper formality, a ſervant brought a note from him, to let his worſhip know, he could not come himſelf that morning, but deſired he would take proper care of the woman he had ordered to be taken before him, who kept an houſe of bad fame in ſuch a ſtreet, where, upon the leaſt enquiry, he would not fail to find

find ſufficient matter againſt her, from her neighbours.

Though his lordſhip's not coming was a diſappointment to his worſhip, after the preparations he had made to receive him; and baulked him of an important advertiſement for the next morning, yet the general wording of his note gave him ſome conſolation, as it might ſeem to authorize any meaſures he might pleaſe to take, to ſqueeze the criminal before him.——'This may 'do (ſaid he to his clerk) this may do 'ſomething: but we muſt proceed with 'caution, for Mrs. ——— is an old *hand*: 'let her be called in; I'll *ſoften* her a little 'firſt, and then you may work upon her 'after as you pleaſe.'

As ſoon as ſhe came in, his worſhip accoſted her thus:—'So, miſtreſs; this is a 'fine affair; I knew what your doings 'would come to, at laſt; I have often warned you; but you would take no advice; 'and now you ſee the conſequence!—Do, 'make her *mittimus!* I muſt wait upon his 'lordſhip; and I cannot go till ſhe is committed!'—'*Committed! dear your worſhip, 'for what muſt I be committed? I have done 'nothing.*'—'No! to be ſure you have 'done nothing! his lordſhip would proſecute you ſo ſeverely for nothing: Look

'at

'at this letter! do you know this hand-
'writing? His lordſhip has here given me
'an account of the whole affair, and de-
'ſired that I would proceed againſt you,
'with the utmoſt rigour of the law!
'I have already ſent to ſearch your
'houſe.'

This word compleated the terrors, into which the ſight of his lordſhip's well-known hand had thrown her; and deprived her of all reſolution and preſence of mind. She burſt into tears, and throwing herſelf on her knees, 'Oh, good your worſhip! dear
'Mr. Clerk (ſaid ſhe) adviſe me: aſſiſt
'me to get over this misfortune! here is
'my watch; it coſt 50*l.* at a pawn-bro-
'ker's but a month ago; it is a repeater!
'take it, Mr. Juſtice! Mr. Clerk, here
'are my rings! they are the only valuable
'things I have: take them, and help me
'out at this dead lift: ſend, and ſtop the
'people from going into my poor houſe;
'I ſhall be *blown up!* the gentlemen will
'all deſert me: I ſhall be ruined, juſt
'when I have brought things to a little
'bearing: help me but this once, and I
'never will give you cauſe to complain of
'me again: I will always be punctual to
'my promiſe.'

CHAP.

## CHAP. VIII.

*She is discharged on proper bail. The labours of* CHRYSAL's *new master, in the service of the public, with some of the various mysteries of his office*

THE work was now done, and a wink having settled the *cue* between the justice and his clerk, the latter began thus: 'If I may presume to advise your worship, 'though this is a very bad affair to be 'sure, yet as it is not quite felony, *by the 'statute*, I am humbly of opinion, that if 'bail could be got'—'*Dear Mr. clerk, I am 'obliged to you.*'—'But then consider, my 'Lord is a great man.'—'That is true, 'please you worship; but the law is greater 'than any man, and the law is very tender 'of the liberty of the subject, and says ex-'press*ly in the statute In favore libertis*, that 'no person shall be confined that can get 'bail; and beside, who knows, if she was 'at liberty, but she might find means to 'be reconciled to his lordship; and so all 'would be well.'—'*Dear Mr. clerk, that 'is true; I could easily be reconciled to him;*

'*I*

'*I know how to gain his favour, when his anger is a little cooled.*'—'Why, Mrs. if you are quite ſure of that, I believe we may venture to bail you: but where are your friends?'—'*Dear your worſhip, I have no friends; I have nothing to make friends with; I throw myſelf upon you, gentlemen!*'—'Why really this is a nice caſe, but if you'll ſtep into the next room, we will conſider what can be done for you.'—'*Oh! but ſend and ſtop the men that went to my houſe!*'—'Never fear, they were not to go without further orders.'

When ſhe was gone out, 'Well (ſaid the juſtice) this has been a good *hit*, it makes up for the bad week: but cannot you gueſs what this matter is?'—'Not a word of it (replied the clerk) ſhe has not dropped a ſyllable herſelf, that could let me the leaſt into it, and I would not diſcover my ignorance by aſking her any queſtions. But I ſuppoſe it is only ſome trick ſhe has played my lord, about a girl, for you know ſhe has often told us, that he was one of her beſt cuſtomers, and boaſted of his protection; and if it is no more than that, as I imagine, he will think no more of it, and ſo the beſt way is to let her go, for indeed we cannot keep her, if we would; though to keep

'up the form, for fear ſhe ſhould *ſmell* us 'out, ſhe muſt have ſome bail: and there-'fore I'll go and fill a bond, and make a 'couple of our people put on their BAIL-'ING CLOATHS, and come and ſign with 'her, though I do not think ſhe has mo-'ney left to pay for the bond, or make the 'fellows drink: but ſhe has done pretty 'well already, that is the truth.'

Saying this, he went out, and in a little time returned with my late miſtreſs, and two of the fellows, the ſhabbineſs of whoſe appearance had made his worſhip order them out of the lord's ſight juſt before, now dreſſed out like reputable houſe-keepers, who gravely ſigned with my miſtreſs, without ever aſking what; and, upon her returning a negative ſhrug, to a wink from the clerk, went out, without a word.

The buſineſs was now over, and my late miſtreſs diſmiſſed to follow her occupation, and make up, by double diligence, for the misfortunes of that morning, only with an aſſurance to the clerk, that ſhe would remember his kindneſs, and be *punctual* for the future.

I was now entered into a ſervice, where I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the whole myſtery of juſtice: but you muſt not expect that I ſhould reveal all the ſecrets of ſo

vene-

venerable a trade; though I may give a few general hints for your information, in ſo abſtruſe and intricate a ſcience.

The affair of my late miſtreſs was the laſt of that morning. My worſhipful maſter putting *me* into his purſe, and going directly to dinner, which had *waited* for him ſome time. But though his fare was good, his care for the public would not permit him to make long meals, or debauch away his time. After a ſhort refreſhment of only two hours, he returned to his office, where he reaſſumed his labours, in all the various branches of his extenſive employment.—— The firſt thing he looked into, was the *informations*, which the affair of my miſtreſs had interrupted in the morning, as I told you before; when calling his people, one after another, before him, he went through them regularly, in this manner: '*John Gibbet*, 'you here inform me that you have found 'out the perſon who took the gentleman's 'hat, in the quarel in *Chelſea* fields, laſt 'Sunday evening, which you think to 'make a robbery of: Let me hear the cir-'cumſtances of that affair, for you are ſo 'keen a blood-hound, when you get upon 'any ſcent, that you are for making every 'thing robbery, be the caſe what it will.'

'Pleaſe

'Pleaſe your worſhip (replied *Gibbet*, 'turning the *quid* in his cheek, and ſquirting out the juice) I do all things for the 'beſt, and that you know; and that I have 'brought many things to bear, which nobody elſe would undertake, as witneſs 'that affair on *Shuter's-hill*, that got you 'ſo much credit, and money too.'—'*Why 'that is true*, JOHN; *but then* YOU *ſhould 'remember alſo the curſed ſcrape you brought 'me into about the young fellow who wrote the 'threatening letters to the farmer, about burning his barns; you undertook to prove that 'too: but you know how you left me in the 'lurch, after I had gone ſuch lengths, as had 'like to have ruined me. Plain ſwearing will 'not always do, though never ſo home; you 'ſhould remember that: you ſhould attend to 'circumſtances alſo: but as to this affair, let 'me hear what you can make of it?'*

'Your worſhip muſt know, that *I*, and 'two or three more of our people, having 'nothing to do, *ſhammed* a quarrel, in 'which a gentleman, who was coming by, 'loſt his hat. It was a large hat, with a 'very broad gold lace, ſuch as your foreigners wear; it was I that ſhoved off 'the hat, and ſeeing a ſhabby idle-looking 'young fellow ſtanding by, without one, 'I took it up, and aſking him if it was his,

'reached

'reached it to him, and saw him make off 'with it directly. Now if this is not a 'plain robbery, I do not know what is! a 'fellow runs away with a gentleman's hat, 'who advertises it, with a reward for ta-'king the thief, whom he will prosecute! 'now I have found out the fellow's haunts, 'for indeed I dogged him, and will have 'himself whenever you please, and can 'clench the prosecution, by swearing that 'I saw him carry off the hat; and you 'know I need say no more, nor take any 'notice who gave it to him.'

'*Why*, JOHN, *there may be something 'in this affair I like it very well*, JOHN! '*and so clerk, you may enter him on the list, 'for next sessions. This affair has a good look; 'nor is there any thing unjust in it; for though 'you gave him the hat; as he knew it was not 'his own, and yet carried it off, he is guilty 'of the theft, and that is the same as robbery, 'in justice, though it may not in law; and jus-'tice is the thing to go by, with a safe con-'science. And so you may go,* John, *I will 'let you know when it will be proper to 'have him taken up, only have an eye to him, 'for fear any one else should snap him out of 'our hands.——Who comes next!* RICHARD SLY, *you say you have found out the knot of 'young fellows that have began to infest the*

'*ſtreets for ſome nights paſt.*'—'Aye, pleaſe
'your worſhip, (ſays *Sly*, ſhrugging up his
'ſhoulders, and grinning) I have found them
'out, to be ſure; and well I might! for
'it was I firſt ſet them on the *lay*.'—'*How*,
'RICHARD! *take care of what you ſay!*'—
'Oh, your worſhip, never fear *Dick Sly*
'for a ſlippery trick! I know what I ſay
'very well: I have known for ſome time
'that theſe youths have been playing a
'ſmall game, cribbing from the *till*, and
'building *ſconces*, and ſuch like tricks, that
'there was no taking hold of; I therefore
'thought it would be right to bring them to
'juſtice, at any rate, and ſo laid the plan of
'this gang, and entered them into the buſi-
'neſs myſelf, and now, whenever you have
'a mind to *nub* them, you need only take me
'up, and I can *peach* them all, which will
'be no bad affair, there are ſo many of them.
—'*Why that is true*, RICHARD; *but they
'have done nothing yet that deſerves ſo ſevere
'a remedy as the gallows! therefore let them
'alone; perhaps they may mend: or if they do
'not, it will be time enough to take them up
'when they deſerve it more than now. To be
'ſure, your peaching them, who firſt drew
'them in, is not ſo very juſt; but then the
'law will ſupport you in it, and while a man
'has the law of his ſide, he may laugh at the
'gal-

'*gallows. And ſo* RICHARD, *have a good* '*look out till theſe youths are ripe for* TY-'BURN, *and then your harveſt will come.*'

It would be endleſs to go through this whole buſineſs particularly. Be it ſufficient to ſay, that there was no breach of the laws, which ſome of his people did not give him an information of, and almoſt all, as accomplices, while his whole care was to conſider, which could turn moſt to his advantage, in the conviction, and to ſettle the evidence againſt them, ſo as it might be ſure not to miſcarry.

## CHAP. IX.

*An highway-man, improperly taken, ſaves his life, by loſing his reaſon. Judicial ſagacity, and eloquence triumphant over common-ſenſe, and matter of fact. This myſtery explained.*

WHILE he was in the midſt of this buſineſs, he was ſurprized with the news of an highway-man, that moment brought in by a gentleman who had taken him, in the very attempt of robbing him on *Turnham-Green*. This threw the whole houſe into an uproar,—'*An highwayman*

'*taken, and by the very party!* (exclaimed 'the juſtice in an agony of rage and vexa-'tion) *This is moſt unfortunate*; *there is* 40*l.* '*dead loſs, beſide the ſhame of it: how ſhall* '*I ſupport my conſequence, if other people can* '*ſerve the publick without my aſſiſtance?*'

'I wonder who it can be (ſaid the clerk) 'I ſuppoſe the man on the white mare, or 'the maſk, from *Putney-Common!* but 'whoever it is, ſomething muſt be done! '*He* muſt be ſaved this time, to ſave *our* 'credit, and we may have him the next, 'ourſelves! Here they come: do you keep 'the gentleman in diſcourſe, while I ſpeak 'to the priſoner, and ſee how he can *come* '*down*. I ſhall readily give you your '*cue*.'

Juſt then entered the gentleman with his priſoner, whom they directly knew to be an old offender, who had long baffled their purſuit: a circumſtance, that heightened the vexation of his being taken by another, and was not a little favourable to him at this time.

His worſhip received the gentleman moſt politely, and deſired him to ſit down a moment, till he ſhould finiſh a letter he was writing to *the ſecretary of ſtate*, and then he would attend to his buſineſs, ordering the priſoner

priſoner to be removed into another room for the mean time.

He then ſate himſelf down to write, with great deliberation, and had *juſt finiſhed*, when his clerk came to deliver him a letter *from the lord mayor*, which he read over attentively, and ſaying it was very well, he then turned to the gentleman, and aſking his pardon for making him wait ſo long, ordered the priſoner to be brought in.

The highway-man appeared now a quite different perſon from what he did, when he was in the room a few minutes before; his looks, which were then clouded with the gloom of liſtleſs dejection and deſpair, being inflamed into the fierceſt agitations of phrenzy.

The gentleman ſhewed his ſurprize at this change, as did his worſhip his uneaſineſs for his own ſafety, from the fury of ſo outrageous a madman. As ſoon as he was *ſecured*; the juſtice addreſſing himſelf, with the height of judicial ſolemnity, to the proſecutor, 'Pray Sir (ſaid he) will you pleaſe 'to inform me what you have to alledge 'againſt this unhappy perſon?'—'Sir (re-'plied the gentleman) all I have to ſay, is, 'that he ſtopped me this afternoon, upon '*Turnham-Green*, and preſenting a piſtol at 'me, bid me deliver my money, but be-

'ing well armed, and having more about me
'than I chose to lose, instead of my purse,
'I drew a pistol too, and his missing fire, I
'grappled with, and took him on the spot,
'and from thence brought him directly
'here: that is all I have to say, Sir!'

'*And pray, Sir, what did he say when you*
'*had taken him?*'—'Not a word, Sir, nor
'has he spoke a syllable since; nor an-
'swered any one question he has been
'asked.'——'*Aye, 'tis so! poor gentleman,*
'*it is so!—And pray, Sir, did he make much*
'*resistance when you took him?*'—'The ut-
'most he was able; but being better moun-
'ted, and much stronger than him, I soon
'overpowered him, though not without
'great danger, for after I had him down,
'he drew this knife, and very narrowly
'missed plunging it into my body! You
'see what a cut he made in my coat and
'waistcoat!'—'*Aye, poor man, madness is*
'*always desperate: I fear, Sir, you have been*
'*too hasty in this affair.*'—'How, Sir, too
'hasty, to take a man in the very action of
'highway robbery? I do not understand
'you, Sir!'

'*Sir, I mean that this person is no robber,*
'*but an unhappy gentleman of family and for-*
'*tune, who has been for some time out of his*
'*mind: I have been applied to by his relations,*

'*more*

'*more than once, to try to have him appre-*
'*hended, that he might be confined; and now*
'*he is secured, they will take proper care of*
'*him, that he shall not frighten any body for*
'*the future; for I am satisfied, Sir, that was*
'*all he meant; and that he would not have*
'*taken your money, had you offered it to him:*
'*I suppose you searched him, when you had*
'*overpowered him, poor man, as you justly*
'*termed it! Pray, Sir, did you find any*
'*thing upon him, to make you think he was*
'*an highway-man? Any watches! jewels!*
'*or different purses of money? or more money*
'*than you might think it probable a person of*
'*his appearance might commonly carry about*
'*him?*'

'No really, Sir, I did not find any thing
'like what you mention! this purse, which
'seems to have about 30 or 40 guineas in
'it, (for I have not reckoned them) was the
'only thing in all his pockets, except the
'knife which he drew on me; his pistols
'were openly in his saddle, as gentlemen
'commonly wear them.'

'*Very well, and does not his present beha-*
'*viour and whole conduct in this affair con-*
'*vince you, that the unhappy man could have*
'*no felonious intent, in his mad attack upon*
'*you: for men, mad as he is, have no in-*
'*tention at all; and, without a felonious in-*

'*tent, there can be no robbery: but, I pre-*
'*ſume, you may underſtand ſomething of the*
'*law yourſelf, Sir?*'

'No indeed, Sir, I cannot ſay I know
'any more law, than juſt not to wrong any
'perſon, nor let them wrong me, if I can
'help it, as far as common ſenſe will di-
'rect me: I thank God, I have ſpent my
'days quietly in the country, and never
'had a diſpute with any man in my life.'

'*Common ſenſe, dear Sir! common ſenſe is*
'*a blind guide in matters of law! Law and*
'*common-ſenſe are quite different things; but*
'*as I was ſaying, Sir, where there is no felo-*
'*nious intent, there can be no felony; now*
'*robbery is puniſhed only becauſe it is felony, for-*
'*ſo the indictment muſt be laid;* FELONICE,
'*Sir,* FELONICE, *or it will not do! The in-*
'*dictment will be quaſhed without that word;*
'*and who can charge a man with a felonious*
'*intent, who is diſordered in mind, and can*
'*have no intention at all. 'Tis true, the ap-*
'*pearance was bad, and ſufficiently terrifying,*
'*to authorize your apprehending him; but as*
'*you ſuffered neither loſs, nor hurt, I cannot*
'*ſuppoſe, that a gentleman of your humane ap-*
'*pearance would deſire to add to the miſery of*
'*his preſent unhappy condition, that of impri-*
'*ſonment till the next ſeſſions, when he muſt*
'*be acquitted of courſe, as that would cer-*

'*tainly*

'*tainly make his madneſs for ever incurable;*
'*—Whatever expence you have been at in*
'*bringing him here, I will take upon me to*
'*reimburſe you, out of the money in his purſe,*
'*beſide what gratification you pleaſe to require,*
'*for your own time and trouble! This, Sir, is*
'*what I would recommend to you, as a Chriſtian*
'*and a gentleman, as you appear to be: but if*
'*you are of another opinion, you muſt only ſwear*
'*to your information, and enter into a recog-*
'*nizance of proſecution, while I ſign his* MIT-
'TIMUS, *and ſend word to his friends, who*
'*are people of condition.*'

'Indeed, Sir, you judge very rightly of
'me; I would not aggravate the diſtreſs
'of any human being! If you know the
'unhappy man, and that he is under ſo
'ſevere an affliction, as the loſs of reaſon,
'I have nothing farther to ſay, than that I
'am ſorry for his misfortune, and would
'not for the world be the cauſe of heighten-
'ing it, as I had no motive for apprehend-
'ing him, but the duty which I and every
'member owe the publick. I thank hea-
'ven for my own eſcape from him, and do
'not deſire to make any advantage of it.
'As to the people who aſſiſted me in bring-
'ing him hither, they are ſtill unpaid, and
'you know beſt how to deal with them, ſo

'I leave the whole affair to you, and am Your humble ſervant.'

I have not interrupted this account, with any notice of the behaviour of the criminal, as it conſiſted only of the moſt outragious imitation of madneſs, with imprecations and blaſphemies too horrid for repetition.

As ſoon as the gentleman was gone, and the room cleared of all, but the juſtice, his clerk, and the *madman*, who was left bound to keep up the farce, his worſhip thus addreſſed him, 'So ſir, you thought to reign 'for ever; but you ſee what your feats 'have come to! I ſuppoſe you are ſurprized at the pains I have taken to bring 'you through this affair!'—'Not at all 'ſir, (replied the criminal) the bank note 'for 200 l. which I had concealed in the 'ſleeve of my coat, and gave your clerk' —'How, ſir, (ſaid the juſtice in a rage) 'do you pretend to ſay it was upon any ſuch 'account? But you judge of others by 'yourſelf. However, I ſhall not ſtand to 'argue the matter with you now; you 'have eſcaped for this time, and may be 'glad of it! but take care for the future! 'your luck may not always be ſo good'—— '*Will your worſhip pleaſe to order your people 'to return me my horſe and arms? and I hope 'you will give me my purſe; for life without*

'*ſome-*

'*ſomething to ſupport it is no great obligation.*'
—'What ſir! do you pretend to capitulate!
'Your horſe you ſhall have, not that you
'have any right to expect him, but be-
'cauſe it would not be proper to keep him,
'after the repreſentation that impoſed upon
'the fool who took you; and here are half
'a ſcore guineas to carry you to ſome place
'where you are not known, and to main-
'tain you till you can get into ſome honeſt
'way of earning your bread. The reſt is
'little enough to give the people inſtead
'of your horſe, and to ſtop their mouths.
'You may ſtay here till the crowd is diſ-
'perſed, when you may go where you
'pleaſe.'——As there was no remedy, the criminal was forced to ſubmit; nor indeed did he ſeem much diſſatisfied at the heavineſs of his compoſition.

## CHAP. X.

*An inſtance of his worſhip's exemplary juſtice on a ſhop-lifter. The unfaſhionable compaſſion and generoſity of a ſailor. A diſpute about ſuperiority of ſkill between his worſhip and his clerk, opens new myſteries in the profeſſion.*

IT was now pretty late, and my maſter was juſt retiring to ſupper, pleaſed with having made ſo good a day, when he was ſtopped by more buſineſs. A woman who kept a chandler's ſhop, in the next ſtreet, had dragged before him one of her poor neighbours, whom ſhe had caught in the very fact of ſtealing a pound of cheeſe off her counter, as ſhe was reaching her a two-penny loaf from the ſhelf: a crime that was heightened by ingratitude too, as ſhe was giving her the loaf on truſt; the thief having owned to her, that ſhe had not a farthing in the world to pay for it, nor a morſel to give her three ſmall children, who had been faſting the whole day.

Enraged at the heinouſneſs of the crime, and at being kept from ſupper, while the chickens

chickens and aſparagus were cooling on the table, his worſhip, knitting his brows, and putting on all the magiſtrate, aſked the trembling wretch, with a voice that pierced her ſoul,—'What ſhe had to ſay for her-'ſelf, and whether ſhe was guilty of the 'crime laid to her charge, or not.'—

The poor creature, almoſt dead with wretchedneſs, want, and fear, threw her-ſelf at his feet, and pouring out a flood of tears, that for ſome moments choaked her utterance, 'O mercy! mercy! (ſaid ſhe) 'for the love of the ſweet *Jeſus*, have 'mercy on a poor wretch, whom want 'alone compelled to this firſt offence, to 'ſave the lives of three poor infants, who 'are this moment periſhing with hunger. 'Oh, ſend, and prove the truth of what I 'ſay; ſend and learn their miſery, and it 'will move you to relieve them, and then 'I care not what becomes of me.'—'*Very fine truely! if we admit ſuch excuſes 'for ſhop-lifting, there will be enough ready 'to plead them. Here, make her* mittimus; '*ſhe confeſſes the fact; as for her brats, baſ-'tards too, I ſuppoſe, let them be ſent to the 'work-houſe*'———'Oh the poor creatures! 'they are not baſtards; and they have no 'pariſh to be ſent to. My huſband is a 'ſailor, who was preſſed on board a man of

'war

'war ſix years ago, and has been in the '*Weſt-Indies* ever ſince, till this ſummer, 'when the ſhip was ordered home to be 'laid up. Poor ſoul! he thought he ſhould 'be paid off, and ſo wrote me word to '*Corke*, to come to him, for he meant to 'go and ſettle in *Scotland*, his own country; 'but the moment he came to *Portſmouth*, 'he was *turned over* into another ſhip, with-'out getting a ſhilling of his ſix years 'wages or prize-money, and ſent away di-'rectly to *America*; ſo that, after ſpending 'every penny I had in the world, to come 'to him from *Ireland*, as he deſired, I am 'left here with my poor children, to ſtarve 'in a ſtrange place, where no-body has any 'compaſſion for me, though my huſband 'wrote me word, that he had above 300l. 'due to him for wages and prize-money; 'here is his letter! I never go without it! 'it is all the comfort I have in my diſtreſs.'

'*Aye, I thought ſo! I thought you were* 'one of thoſe Iriſh *thieves that came to rob us,* '*and cut our throats! but I ſhall take care* '*of you! I ſhall make you wiſh you had con-*'*tinued eating potatoes at home. I wiſh I* '*could provide as well for every one of your* '*country! we ſhall never be well, till we have* '*hang'd you all.*'—'Oh good your worſhip! 'I am no thief; I never ſtole any thing

'before.

'before. And this woman, who has 'brought me before you, knows the truth 'of every thing I have told your worſhip; 'and that I have always paid her honeſtly 'while I had a penny in the world; for I 'have dealt with her ever ſince I came to '*London*; but hunger, and the cries of 'three ſtarving children, forced me to this! 'Oh my children, my children!'—'*Peace,* '*woman! all you can ſay ſignifies nothing*; '*you were taken in the fact, and to* Newgate '*you ſhall go directly. And as for your brats,* '*it is better for them to die of hunger now,* '*than to live to be hanged like their mother.*'—

By this time, the *mittimus* was ready, which he ſigned without the leaſt heſitation or pity, and then hurried away to his ſupper, having almoſt fretted his bowels out, to think it was ſpoiled by waiting ſo long.

But though the Juſtice's compaſſion could not be moved, by ſuch a *poor* wretch, his clerk was not ſo inexorable, but yielded to the perſuaſion of an honeſt *tar*, who ſeeing a croud at the door, had given ſix-pence to go in, and ſee the *fun*; and for two guineas, *which barely paid the fees*, ventured to make up the affair, and let her go about her buſineſs, *though he did not know what might be the conſequence, if it ſhould ever come to his worſhip's knowledge.*—*Jack* took no notice of what

what he ſaid, but taking the poor creature, who was juſt ſinking under the agitations of fear, joy, and gratitude, by the hand, 'Chear away, ſiſter (ſaid he) chear away; 'we'll bring up all this lee-way, next trip. 'Damn my eyes and limbs, if I'll ſee a 'brother ſeaman's family at ſhort allow-'ance, while I have a ſhilling! come, 'heave a-head; I'll rig and victual you 'and your children, againſt your huſband 'comes, to man you for a voyage home. 'I'll ſwing my hammock in the next birth, 'and you ſhall cook the kettle, while I 'ſtay aſhore.'—Saying which words, he led her off in triumph.—This the clerk told his worſhip, when he come in to ſupper, giving him one of the guineas, as his ſhare of the compoſition.

I now thought the buſineſs of the day over, and was preparing to take a view of my new maſter's heart, while he and his clerk where enjoying their ſucceſs over an hearty bottle. But I was prevented, by an accident, which diſturbed for a while, and had like to have entirely broken off this harmony between them, a diſpute, like thoſe between all conquerors, ariſing about the diviſion of the ſpoil, and the merit in the acquiſition of it.

This

'This will do (ſaid his worſhip, clap-
'ping his hands a kimbo, after a full glaſs)
'this will do! what between the bawd in
'the morning, and the highwayman in
'the afternoon, we have made a noble day
'of it! But what have you ordered about
'that fellow? I hope you have taken care
'that we may have him ourſelves next.'
'Never fear (replied the clerk) I have done
'for him. I have ſent people to *lay* all the
'roads he can go, from the inn where he
'ordered his horſe; and *plauſible Tom* is
'fixed there, to ſcrape an acquaintance
'with him, ſo that he cannot eſcape.

'*Aye, let* Tom *alone to manage him;*
'*many a cunning fellow's heart has that* Tom
'*crept into, till he has wheedled him to Tyburn!*
'*Not a lawyer of them all has a ſmoother*
'*tongue. But did not I improve the hint of*
'*the madneſs well? how quietly the gudgeon*
'*ſwallowed it! If I were to ſet about it, I*
'*believe in my ſoul, I could have perſuaded*
'*him out of his own ſenſes, and made him think*
'*himſelf mad, as well as the highwayman!*
'*ha! ha! ha! Though you were not quite*
'*clear enough in your note; you ſhould have*
'*told me all the particulars; I was often at a*
'*loſs; but upon the whole, I think I did pretty*
'*well; pretty well, I think!*'

'Why

'Why aye, you did ſo manage it pretty 'well, when I had given you the *cue*, and 'ſo might any one have done. But how 'would you have contrived to bring him 'off, if I had not made that hit!'—'*How!* '—*why eaſily enough!*—'*I would have*—— '*But what have you done with the bank-note? 'let me ſee that!*'—'The note! it is ſafe 'enough. But you do not tell me, how 'you would have managed to have earned 'it; I think you ſhould do that before you 'aſk for it'——'*How I would have earned 'it! why pray, good ſir, do you know whom 'you talk to in this manner?*'——'Whom 'I talk to!—I talk to the worſhipful juſtice '—— whoſe betters I have talked to 'before now; and who would not have 'aſked me that queſtion ſome years ago, 'when he applied to me, to inſtruct him 'in the buſineſs of his office!'—'*Inſolence! 'inſtruct me! I'll make you know ſir, that 'I underſtand my buſineſs, without your in-'ſtruction! I'll take another clerk to-morrow.*' —'With all my heart, good maſter juſtice! 'with all my heart; and ſee who will be 'the loſer by that. If you do not know it 'yet, you will ſoon ſee then, whether the 'buſineſs comes to the juſtice or his clerk; 'for I give you notice, that I ſhall take all '*the people* with me; you ſhall have the

'credit

'credit of making up a new *ſet* for your-
'ſelf, I aſſure you.'——'*Very fine! very*
'*fine treatment this!*'——'Why do you
'deſerve it then, ſir, if you do not like it.
'I ſay very fine treatment too! that you
'ſhould take upon you to undervalue
'my ſkill, and aſſume the credit of it to
'yourſelf; you, whom I firſt taught, and
'ſtill ſupport in your office, in deſpight of
'all your blunders! — As for the bank-
'note, here it is, and here it ſhall be, till
'we have ſettled the account of the laſt ſeſ-
'ſions, when you were ſo clever upon
'me, ſending me, on a fool's errand, out
'of the way, while you took up the re-
'ward. Perhaps you thought I did not
'ſee through your deſign, or that I was
'afraid to ſpeak of it, but you were quite
'miſtaken; I only waited till the remedy
'ſhould come into my own hands, and
'now it has, be aſſured I ſhall make uſe
'of it, whatever you may think, ſir! and
'farther let me tell you, that if you ſay
'much more, I will think of parting in
'earneſt, if you do not think proper to
'come to a new agreement: for I ſee no
'reaſon why you ſhould carry off two thirds
'of the profit, only becauſe you are *juſtice*
'indeed, though I do all the buſineſs!'—

CHAP

## CHAP. XI.

*The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worſhip goes next morning to hear a charity-ſermon, and from thence to eat a charity-feaſt, where* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. Some account of the nature of a charity-feaſt.*

MATTERS were now at ſuch an height, that I every minute expected they would have proceeded from words to blows, when a pull at the bell brought them both to themſelves in an Inſtant.

'Hah! that is true! this is quarter night '(ſaid the juſtice) and here the ladies are 'come! Give me your hand: why ſhould 'we fall out about our ſkill, while the buſineſs goes on well: here's my ſervice to 'you; and let there be no more of it.'—

'With all my heart (replied the clerk) 'but why will you urge me on thus, when 'you know that I cannot bear to have my 'ſkill called in queſtion?'—

By

By this time the ladies entered, whom I directly ſaw to be the *commode* matrons, and compliant fair, of his diſtrict, who came duly to compound with him, for the breach of thoſe laws he was appointed to ſupport.

The very mention of this ſcene, ſufficiently explains the nature of it, and makes a more particular deſcription unneceſſary. All parties behaved properly on the occaſion. *They* paid their ſubſidies, for which he returned them very wholeſome advice, to behave with diligence and diſcretion in their profeſſions; and eſpecially thoſe who lived in his neighbourhood, he cautioned to avoid all riots, and cauſes of offence, which might bring his connivance and protection into ſuſpicion; then relaxing from the ſeverity of his morals, he gave up the reſt of the night, and a good part of the next morning, to mirth and good-fellowſhip, in the company of a few of his particular favourites, and beſt cuſtomers of this motly ſet, having diſmiſſed the reſt to the purſuit of their occupations.

The buſineſs of the day, and pleaſures of the night, had ſo far exhauſted his ſpirits, that nature required a long pauſe: accordingly, no buſineſs coming in to diſturb him (for ſuch was his vigilance in his office,

and

and care for the public, that every thing gave way to that) he made a late morning, not waking till he was called to attend a ſermon and dinner, which were to be that day for the benefit of a charity, to which he was a conſtant benefactor; as indeed his publick ſpirit made him, to all that were already eſtabliſhed, and prompted him to ſtrike out many new; in which, as the author of them, he hoped to have the management, while novelty ſhould make it the faſhion to ſupport them.

But in this he was always diſappointed. For though, in the multitude of his ſchemes, he ſometimes ſtumbled upon a good one, yet his head was ſo confuſed, and his notions ſo wild and immethodical, that before he could digeſt his plans into any regularity, ſome one elſe took up the hint, and ran away with the credit of the deſign.

At church he *edified* greatly, by a comfortable *nap*, during the ſermon, which finiſhed his refreſhment, and ſent him with a clear head, and keen ſtomach, to the feaſt, where every perſon ſeemed to vie, in demonſtrating his attachment to the cauſe of their meeting, by the quantity he eat and drank.

I here changed my ſervice once more, being given by his worſhip in his ſubſcription,

tion, and ſo came into the poſſeſſion of a community in general, which gave me an opportunity of ſeeing the human heart in a more complicated view, than perhaps any other ſcene of its actions could afford; as there was hardly a profeſſion, degree, or rank of life, which had not a repreſentative in this meeting, nor a motive of action, however apparently contrary to its deſign, or contradictory to each other, which did not contribute its influence to the bringing them together.

While I lay in the hands of the treaſurer of the charity, unaſſigned to any particular uſe, or perſon, I enjoyed a ſtate of liberty, ſomething like that of living in a commonwealth, having it in my power to enter into the hearts of all the governors (who were now my owners) as I liked, and to make any obſervations, without reſtraint to any particular perſon, time, or place.

Charity is the moſt amiable, and moſt exalted of the human virtues, and that which riſes to the neareſt imitation of the divine. Nor can any thing be a ſtronger proof of the beneficence of the author of the human nature, than his placing this virtue, which is the perfection of it, within the reach of every individual.

For

For charity is a diſpoſition to think well of, and do well to, every other human being, without partiality, prejudice or reſpect, to any other motive, than this univerſal duty; giving of alms being no more than one, and that perhaps the very meaneſt, effect of it.

But this extenſiveneſs of the nature of charity is the reaſon of its being generally miſconceived, and moſt erroneouſly confined to this effect, by minds unable to comprehend its greater excellence; and from this miſtake, have proceeded many of the extraordinary inſtances of this effect of charity, which diſtinguiſhes the preſent age.

This is a moſt dangerous error; it is too like thinking to bribe heaven with the wages of hell; and yet profanely abſurd as ſuch a notion is, daily obſervation ſhews the extenſive prevalence of it.

As charity is ſuch a refined and exalted virtue, and purely ſpiritual, it muſt appear ſtrange to you, how it ſhould enter into the head of man, to make ſo groſs, low, and ſenſual a paſſion as eating, the foundation of it! Indeed ſo unnatural is the thought to pure ſpeculation, unacquainted with the perverſions of life, that a charity-feaſt, in the literal meaning of the phraſe, muſt be taken for a meeting of the poor to eat the

pro-

proviſions ſupplied for them by the rich, inſtead of the rich meeting to gorge their own appetites.

But a little obſervation of the preſent byas of the world, will ſolve this difficulty. Of all the *natural* appetites and paſſions, which poſſeſs that part of mankind, whoſe age has enabled them to amaſs money enough to give away, eating is the moſt univerſal. I ſay natural paſſions, for fraud, avarice, or ambition, or even luſt, at that time of life, are not the paſſions of nature.

To gratify this, therefore, was the moſt probable ſcheme for drawing *them* together: and when that is ſufficiently done, the full heart opens eaſily, and ſhares its abundance with the empty..

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. XII.

*A repreſentation of the company. The hiſtory of one of the principal members. The modern method of bribing heaven with the wages of hell.*

*THEY *had feaſted, nor did their minds yet require ſuch another banquet,* when I became a member of their ſociety; you muſt not expect a particular account or deſcription of ſuch a ſcene. A few general hints muſt ſatisfy your curioſity, as I have told you on other occaſions.

Let your imagination repreſent to you, a number of people, whoſe higheſt pleaſure is eating, ſeated at a large table, covered with all the delicacies, all the rarities of the ſeaſon, in a plenty that promiſed ſatiety to their keeneſt appetites.—But I muſt ſtop! I ſee the very thought has an effect upon you, that ſavours too ſtrongly of ſenſuality, and might, if not checked, put a ſtop to our converſation, by ſome human hankerings. Let us therefore paſs over ſuch a

* Homer.

ſcene, and turn our obſervation to the company, as they ſat, after the fragments of the feaſt were removed. And here it will be proper to have recourſe to the expedient we made uſe of before, and holding up the mirrour to imagination, view the whole ſcene as if actually preſent.

Obſerve then, that enormous bulk of fleſh, that ſits at the head of the table, with his waiſtcoat all unbuttoned, and gaſping for breath; the diſtenſion of his ſtomach having left his lungs ſcarce room to perform the animal functions, and fat almoſt choaked the paſſages of vital air.

He is one of the principal ſupporters of this, and every other publick charity, founded on the modern method of a feaſt; the natural avarice of his heart outwitting itſelf in this inſtance; for as he is ſure of ſatiating his appetites with more and better victuals and wine, at theſe meetings, than he could have at home, for much more than the price of the ticket, the advantage in that bargain, always tempts him to go; and then the happineſs of his heart, in the fulneſs of his ſtomach, opens his purſe, and he ſubſcribes with a liberality that ariſes almoſt to profuſion.

But look into his heart, and read the reſt of his life: the very money which he

beſtows with ſuch an appearance of virtue, on this beſt of uſes (for no error in motive, or manner, muſt take off the merit of an action, that does good) this very money (I ſay) has perhaps been acquired, by vices the moſt oppoſite to the virtues it is applied to.

The greateſt frugality, application, and ſkill in the myſterious buſineſs of a ſcrivener, have raiſed this perſon, from the moſt abject poverty, to affluence, above the moderation of a rational wiſh. But ſo powerful is the force of habit, that though the cauſe has been long ſince removed, the effect ſtill remains, and he perſiſts to ſave and heap up money, by all the mean and iniquitous ways, which want firſt ſuggeſted to him. One inſtance, and that not ſingular, in him, will give you a ſufficient inſight into his character.

A gentleman, whom indiſcretion and indolence of temper, had involved in ſome pecuniary diſtreſſes, had the greater misfortune ſome years ago, to be recommended to this perſon, to borrow ſuch a ſum of money as ſhould extricate him from his immediate difficulties, on a mortgage of his eſtate.

As his ſecurity was good, his buſineſs was ſoon done; but the convenience of his eſtate, to another which this perſon had lately

lately purchaſed in his neighbourhood, and an acquaintance with the unwary eaſineſs of his diſpoſition, made him caſt a wiſhful eye upon it, and form ſchemes for getting it abſolutely into his poſſeſſion.

At firſt he ſtrove to tempt his indiſcretion, by the offer of more money to ſupply his pleaſures, but finding that would not take, and that the ſenſe of his former extravagances dwelt ſo ſtrongly on him, as to give his mind a kind of turn to induſtry, did he know how to apply it, his ready genius ſtruck out a method, that he imagined could not fail of ſucceſs.

He therefore cultivated an intimacy with the gentleman, in which, upon all occaſions, he affected to boaſt of his own ſucceſs in life, and to attribute it to his having always a command of money, to take the advantage of any bargain that might offer.

As this turn of converſation ſeemed to flow only from the fulneſs of his heart, and to be free from all deſign, it had the effect he propoſed, and raiſed a deſire in his friend to follow a method which had been ſo ſucceſsful with him. He therefore, one day, communicated to him a reſolution, which he had formed, of ſelling his eſtate, and applying the money to buſineſs; and de-

ſired his friend's aſſiſtance to execute his deſign. After an appearance of ſurprize, the ſcrivener teſtified his pleaſure and approbation of his prudence, by the readineſs with which he undertook to ſerve him.

The eaſe with which the firſt part of his ſcheme had ſucceeded, made him form further hopes, and think of getting the eſtate he deſired, even at a cheaper rate than purchaſing it.

After ſome time ſpent, as he ſaid, in fruitleſs enquiries, for a purchaſer, he moſt artfully drew his friend, to deſire that he would buy it himſelf: at firſt he ſeemed to heſitate, but then, as it were yielding to the impulſe of his friendſhip, he concluded a bargain for it, on terms evidently advantagious to the ſeller.

All things being agreed upon, the parties met to conclude the affair, when the writings being read over, and the money lying on the table, while the ſcrivener told it, the gentleman executed the deeds of conveyance, and receipt, before proper witneſſes, who withdrew as ſoon as they had ſigned them.

In the mean time, the ſcrivener continued to tell the money, till a ſervant entered haſtily with a letter, as from a lord, who was one of his beſt clients, and deſired

to

to ſee him that moment. The difficulty this threw him into was ſoon ſolved, by his friend's compliance to defer his buſineſs for a few hours, as the lord's urgency would not admit the leaſt delay. Accordingly, he put up both the deeds and money, in all the apparent confuſion of hurry, and went away to his lordſhip.

Next morning the gentleman called to receive the price of his eſtate, but his friend was not at home, nor to be ſpoken with in the afternoon, for his turn was now ſerved, and he neither deſired, nor perhaps thought it ſafe, to keep up any farther acquaintance with him.

As ſuch things might happen to a man in buſineſs, the gentleman took no notice of them, but quietly ſwallowed the ſame excuſes for ſome days ſucceſſively. At length his patience began to be exhauſted, and his fears alarmed at a behaviour ſo ſtrange, and contrary to that height of intimacy that had been between them, even were there no buſineſs in the caſe.——— In this perplexity he went one morning, reſolved not to quit the houſe till he ſhould ſee him; and when a meſſage to that purpoſe was, after long attendance, complied with, upon a warm expoſtulation, he received for anſwer, from his *friend*, that

'he had been of late too much engaged in 'affairs of conſequence, to attend compli-'ments, and knew not any buſineſs he 'could have with him.'

'Not know my buſineſs, Sir (replied 'the gentleman in aſtoniſhment) I come, 'Sir, for my money, and ſhall hereafter 'never trouble you more with buſineſs, or 'compliment.'—'*Your money, Sir! I do 'not underſtand you: pray, Sir, what money 'do you mean?*'—'What money? the pur-'chaſe money of my eſtate, Sir; which 'you were to have paid me above a week 'ago, when I ſigned the deeds of ſale.'—'*Poor gentleman; it is ſo! as I was informed, 'and always feared. He has loſt his reaſon; 'and I ſhould not ſeem much better, to truſt 'myſelf longer with a man in his condition.*'—'Take care, Sir; this is too tender a point 'to be trifled with: you almoſt make me 'mad!'—'*Aye; there it is: he is mad, poor 'man; and is even ſenſible of it himſelf!*'—'Death, Sir; do not dare to dally with 'me a moment longer! anſwer me di-'rectly! pay me my money; and do not 'really provoke me to a madneſs, that may 'be fatal to us both.'—'*Sir, your madneſs, 'or reaſon, is nothing to me: however, I will 'anſwer you directly, that I owe you no money, 'and none will I pay you. As for the pur-*

'*chaſe-*

'*chaſe money of your eſtate, your parting with*
'*which I ſee has turned your brain, when you*
'*come to yourſelf, you will recollect, that I*
'*paid it to you, when you executed the deeds of*
'*ſale; or if you do not remember it, your own*
'*receipt, properly witneſſed, will prove it, for*
'*me, and I deſire no more: and therefore,*
'*Sir, let me have no further trouble with you,*
'*if you do not chuſe to take up your lodgings in*
'MOORFIELDS.'

'This is too much; juſt heaven! this
'is too much: too much for human pa-
'tience to endure! or wait the law's delay
'for remedy! I will avenge myſelf, aſſert
'the cauſe of juſtice; and rid the groaning
'world of ſuch a monſter!' (exclaimed the unhappy gentleman) now really irritated into the extremity of that phrenzy, which the other only wanted to impoſe upon him, and drawing his ſword, before the wretch could call for help, or take any method of defence, he plunged it through his body.

His ſhrieks ſoon alarmed his ſervants, who ruſhing in, found him weltering in his blood, and the madman ſmiling, in the abſence of frantick extaſy over him, and incapable of attention to any other circumſtance, though ſome of them dragged him before a magiſtrate, while the reſt were buſied in procuring relief for their maſter.

The

The madman was committed to priſon, to wait the event of the wound he had given, which heaven, to let the meaſure of the ſcrivener's iniquity be full, had directed to a part where it was not mortal.

In a word, he recovered, though not to a ſenſe of juſtice or humanity, but perſiſting in his iniquity, which now was ſharpened by a ſpirit of revenge, for what he had endured, the firſt effort of his health, was to have the unhappy ſufferer confined in *Bedlam*, where he ſtill languiſhes under all the horrors that attend a total loſs of reaſon, without relief, or even compaſſion from his baſe undoer; who, this very morning, as he was ſtepping into his chariot, to come to this *charity-feaſt*, ſpurned from him with his foot, and refuſed the ſmalleſt alms to the wretched wife of the ruined madman, who begs in the common ſtreets, and was driven by miſery and deſpair, to throw herſelf even at his feet, to implore relief.

I ſee your abhorrence riſe at ſuch a monſter, but how will wonder even heighten it, when I tell you, that this oppreſſor has neither child, nor kinſman, to inherit his wealth; for he was himſelf a foundling, and reared at the publick expence, without the knowledge or tenderneſs of a parent, to ſoften his rugged ſoul, nor would the

ſelfiſh-

ſelfiſhneſs of his heart ever permit him to marry, for fear of the expence of a family; but he is this moment meditating on ſome oſtentatious ſcheme of charity, to the foundation of which, he deſigns to dedicate the wealth which he has amaſſed by ſuch villanies.

## CHAP. XIII.

*Continued: The hiſtory of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He converts a noted bawd, but diſappoints his deſigns, by too great confidence in his own ſkill. The character of a clergyman.*

MOVE your eye to the left, and view that demure-looking picture of devotion, who ſits there in ſilence, lifting up his eyes to heaven, and ſighing in ſpirit, at the feſtivity and ſenſual converſation round him.

Who, that can ſee no deeper than outward appearances, would not think that man ſincere in his profeſſions of religion and virtue? whereas, in truth, he is the moſt abandoned contemner of both; and deepens the dye of his blackeſt crimes by the moſt

hardened hypocriſy, ſecretly living on the practice of thoſe very vices, of which he profeſſes the greateſt abhorrence.

With all that conſequence, which he aſſumes, in the direction of this charity, on the merit of the largeneſs of his ſubſcription to it, in reality, he is but the diſpenſer of other people's benefactions, into whoſe good opinion he ſo inſinuates himſelf, by his pretended piety, that they intruſt their charity to his diſpoſal, who always pays himſelf for his trouble, by ſubducting largely, from the ſums confided to him. For as real charity vaunteth not itſelf, they never divulge the ſecret, compleatly impoſed on, by his addreſs, that never lets one half of his contributors know, of the other; by which management, as the ſums he gives, are always made public, for example and imitation, each thinks that *he* adds moſt liberally to his own donation.——But this is not the only method by which he turns his piety to advantage. The acceſs which the reputation of it gains him, into almoſt every family, opens him an opportunity of carrying on the deepeſt intrigues, and becoming a pandar, for vices both natural and unnatural, which the intereſt of the parties concerned makes them ſtill keep ſecret.—As for the former, the myſtery of

that

that trade has been in part explained already; and the latter is too horrible for explanation. I ſhall therefore paſs over thoſe ſcenes, and conclude my account of this extraordinary perſonage, with one inſtance of his addreſs, in finding out and managing the weak ſide of ſuperſtition and vice.

In the courſe of his love-negotiations, he had made an acquaintance with a woman who kept a publick *bagnio*, or houſe of proſtitution, which acquaintance mutual intereſt cemented into an intimacy. In this moſt infamous trade had this woman amaſſed conſiderable wealth, the diſpoſal of which (after her death) took up much of her thoughts, in thoſe moments, when the conſequences of her debauched life forced her to think of dying.

As the ſecrets of their trade had removed every reſerve from between them, ſhe often uſed to conſult him on this head; when he always comforted her with diſſertations upon religion and virtue, *ſtripping them of the vain incumbrances of prieſtcraft, and bringing them back to their genuine principles of benevolence and charity.*

Frequent inculcation of this doctrine had the effect he deſigned; the matron was pleaſed with the thought of having all the benefit of religion, without the trouble of

the

the practice, and immediately began to exerciſe her devotion in donations to publick charities, which as it was not quite ſo much in character for her to offer in perſon, while ſhe continued her profeſſion, and ſhe ſaw no neceſſity, nor felt inclination to quit that, ſhe always confided to the diſtribution of her ſpiritual guide.

Nor did his ſucceſs ſtop here; he improved his influence on her ſuperſtition, ſo far, that he prevailed on her to compound with heaven for the vices of her life, by bequeathing the earnings of them to its uſe, after her death.

For this purpoſe he himſelf drew her will, which pious application of her fortune ſet her conſcience at eaſe; and ſhe continued her uſual buſineſs to the hour of her death, which happened three years after, with ſuch care and induſtry, that ſome inſtance of negligence, in one of her ſervant's adminiſtring to the pleaſure of her gueſts, gave her ſuch uneaſineſs, in her laſt moments, that with her dying breath ſhe lamented the ruin her houſe muſt come to, after ſhe ſhould quit the care of it, for the joys of heaven.

You muſt not think, that his deſign extended no farther, than to prevail on her to make ſuch a will; he had drawn it himſelf,

as

as I have told you, and took care to word it in ſuch a manner, as he thought ſhould give him, under the appearance of her executor and truſtee, as ſhe deſigned him, a real property in her wealth; as it was immediately to come into his hands, on her death, and there was no time appointed for the fulfilling her pious intentions.

But here his ſagacity diſappointed itſelf: for neglecting to take proper advice, or afraid of making any perſon privy to his deſigns, he had committed ſuch *material* errors in the *form* of the will, as gave room to learned counſel to ſet it aſide, in favour of the heir at law, her nephew, who, from cleaning ſhoes under a gateway, was enriched with at leaſt a third part of his aunt's fortune, which remained to him, after the coſts of the ſuit that had been carried on for him, *in formâ pauperis*, while her executor had the vexation of diſappointment aggravated by a decree *to pay all the coſts.* —— This was a ſevere ſtroke: but it did not break his ſpirit, though it obliged him to return to his former occupation of an *almoner*, which you ſee he purſues with that attention, which always enſures ſucceſs.

I ſee you ſink under the pain of finding the beſt actions debaſed, by ſpringing from ſuch motives: but be careful to avoid an

errour,

errour, fatally too prevalent, of concluding from the abuſe, againſt the uſe of any thing that may, in its end, be conducive to good.

Theſe inſtances I have given; and I could add many more; not to depreciate the cuſtom of giving to public charities, which is the nobleſt uſe of wealth; but to caution you againſt the dangerous errour of thinking, that ſuch giving alone, without reformation of life, and the active practice of the other virtues, can be acceptable in the ſight of him to whom it is offered, or efficacious to procure his favour; and to ſhew the abſurd impiety of periſhing in vice, with a vain hope of bribing heaven with the wages of hell.

But to relieve your pain, behold that venerable perſon who ſits oppoſite to him; the ſerenity of whoſe looks ſhews the happineſs of his mind. Read his heart, and you will not find one diſcontent, or ſorrow there, but what humanity imprints for the diſtreſſes of his fellow-creatures, which his beneficence, his real charity, is for ever finding methods to relieve, not only by pecuniary benefactions, though to theſe is devoted the far greater part of his ample fortune, but alſo by his advice, inſtruction, and good offices, the judicious application and

ſincerity

ſincerity of which, makes them very rarely fail of ſucceſs.—He is a real ſupporter of charity, in its moſt extenſive ſenſe! his example giving a ſanction, a ſeal of virtue, to every thing he appears in, which puts wicked wit out of countenance, and ſtops the tongue of calumny; and is (even were it alone) ſufficient to counterbalance all the inſtances which could be brought againſt it. His long life, which has been extended by heaven, as a bleſſing to mankind, has been a conſtant illuſtration of the religion he teaches; not one inſtance of his actions ever contradicting his profeſſion, as near as human weakneſs can act up to divine perfection.

Such is this clergyman! ſuch ſhould all clergymen be, to preſerve the purity, the dignity of a function, whoſe rules are drawn from perfection, and calculated to prepare the human for a participation of the divine nature, to accompliſh which greateſt end, all profeſſion, not enforced by practice, muſt be ineffectual.

To mention any one inſtance of his good works, would be doing injuſtice to the reſt, and contradicting the deſire of his heart, which, next to doing good, is to conceal what he does, his actions being ſo far from oſtentation, that to heaven only, and the

parties

parties themſelves, are they revealed, nor to theſe even is the hand that reaches them the bleſſing always known.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

## CHAP. XIV.

*The repreſentation concluded with an eminent man-midwife. His motives for taking up that profeſſion, with ſome unfortunate anecdotes of his practice.*

I Shall now preſent you with a character, the folly of which is a ſhade to its virtues, and ſhews them through a medium of ridicule and contempt, more humbling to human vanity, than the moſt atrocious vice.

Obſerve that ſkeleton, that figure of famine, who even after a feaſt, looks as if he had faſted for a month, and was juſt ready to periſh for want. That is another of the principal promoters, and indeed ſupporters of publick charity, from the beſt of motives: his benefactions always flowing from the benevolence of his heart, though too often qualified in the manner, by circumſtances that throw both the gift and giver into ridicule.

For

For ſuch is the vehemence of his temper, that not ſatisfied with providing for the wants of the poor, he will ſee that the ſupplies which he beſtows, are applied in the manner he directs, which introduces him too familiarly, into the domeſtick diſtreſſes of the unhappy, many of whom would rather periſh for want, than make the circumſtances of their wants known: nor is his fortune only devoted to thoſe uſes, his very perſonal ſervice is always ready, particularly in ſome caſes, where, unfortunately, a motive of a very different nature from his real one, is too liable to be miſtaken for it, by the malignant temper of the times.

There is no ſituation of human diſtreſs, that calls ſo ſtrongly for compaſſion and relief, as child-birth. How ſevere then muſt the caſe of thoſe unhappy creatures be, who are left to ſtruggle through ſuch pangs, unaſſiſted, unprovided with any of the comforts, ſo neceſſary to ſupport nature in ſuch a conflict.

A ſenſe of this ſtruck his humane heart! He felt the diſtreſs, and liberally ſupplied the relief. Well had he ſtopped here! But fearing that ſuch relief ſhould be miſapplied, or inſufficient, he would attend himſelf, to ſee that nothing was wanted; and at length,

to

to make his aſſiſtance compleat, learned the *obſtetrick* art, and now neceſſarily has more buſineſs in it, as he pays for being employed, by the benefactions he beſtows, than any one member of the profeſſion.

Laudable as this care, and the motive of it, are, it would have been much better, had not the ſanguineneſs of his temper hurried him ſo far! Had he been content to ſupply their wants, and let others, whoſe profeſſion it more immediately is, adminiſter relief. For now, what a field does it open for ill-natured ridicule, to ſee a man of his conſequence, deſcend to offices, in the ordinary acceptation of the world, ſo beneath him? How eaſy is it to ſay! eaſy to be believed, that idle curioſity, e groſſer motive, prompts to ſuch unon aſſiduity?

is the evil of this indiſcretion con- him alone; it reflects a kind of ridion the very virtue it would ſerve; and leſs ſanguine minds refrain from the , for fear they ſhould alſo ſhare in the oach.—For it is not ſufficient for a man to have the teſtimony of his own conſcience for the rectitude of his inſtructions; there is alſo a debt of appearance due to the publick, to avoid offence, and inculcate virtue by example.

One

One inſtance will illuſtrate this, and ſhew the inconveniences of his inconſiderate zeal.

A poor woman applied to him for relief, ſome time before the moment. According to his cuſtom, he ſupplied her neceſſities, and took a direction where to call and ſee her. The woman, either miſtaken herſelf, or tempted by diſtreſs to deceive him, told him a wrong time, which made him come too ſoon; and as he always made her ſome charitable preſent whenever he came, ſhe ſtill found ſome complaints to induce him to repeat his viſits.

At length, the frequency of his coming took the notice of the alley in which ſ lived, who could not conceive any h buſineſs that a gentleman of his fi pearance could have with ſuch a po man, in ſo obſcure a place; and remarks are always improved, ſom hinted to the woman's huſband, a ing man, who was out at his work a and therefore could not be witneſs o diſgrace, that his wife had *many* impr viſitors come to her, and muſt certain have taken to bad courſes, to encourage ſuch doings.

The cuckold in imagination, went directly home, in the greateſt rage, at his diſ-

diſhonour, but the name of the viſitor, and an aſſurance that there came no other, ſoon pacified him, eſpecially as a ready thought ſtruck him, that he might turn the good man's humanity to an advantage, of a nature very different from what he deſigned; for the fellow was well ſupplied with what is called *mother-wit*, which want had ſharpened, and freed from every reſtraint of honeſty. He therefore ſullenly told his wife, that it might be ſo as ſhe ſaid, but he would have a better proof than her word for it, and ſhe muſt let him ſee her viſitor the next time he came, and as ſhe valued her life, aſſent to every thing which he, her huſband, ſhould do or ſay.

The readineſs of her conſent encouraged him to open his deſign to her, which her nuptial obedience, and hopes of gain, made her not only give into, but ſhe alſo improved the ſcheme to a certainty of ſucceſs.

The huſband accordingly having prepared ſome of his aſſociates, placed them properly, the next time the gentleman went to viſit his wife, who immediately, upon his coming into the room, began to *cry out*, and implore his aſſiſtance.

Though the buſineſs came a little inconveniently upon him, as he was full dreſſed, he would not deſert her in her diſtreſs, but di-

directly ſet about giving her the neceſſary aſſiſtance, in the hurry of which, ſome unlucky ſtoop burſt the ſtring that tied his breeches behind, and down they fell about his heels.

Though this diſaſter diſconcerted him a good deal, the cries of his patient would not give him time to adjuſt himſelf, but he was proceeding in his buſineſs, with the moſt anxious aſſiduity, when in ruſhed the huſband, with his gang, and rewarded his care with a ſtroke, that felled him, fettered as he was in his breeches, to the ground.

The ſcene was now changed! the woman, no longer in labour, cried only for revenge, *on the baſe man who had attempted her vartue*, as the witneſſes preſent atteſted, they had heard her before, and now caught him in the very fact; which the poſture he was in, and above all, the circumſtances of his breeches, too ſtrongly confirmed, to the croud whom the noiſe had drawn together.

Terrified almoſt to death, at the threats of the enraged huſband, who could hardly be held from taking perſonal vengeance that very moment, and ſenſible of the conſequence, ſhould publick fame catch hold of ſuch a tale, the poor *criminal* threw himſelf on his knees, and, convinced that all

vin-

vindication of his innocence would be in vain, beſought only a compoſition for his offence.

This was juſt what the parties wanted; but ſtill to encreaſe his terrors, and enhaunce the price of his eſcape, ſuch difficulties were raiſed, as made him glad to yield to any terms they could impoſe; and accordingly, he not only purged himſelf of having done any actual diſhonour to her huſband, for the intention they would not admit him to controvert, but alſo made ſatisfaction to his reſentment for the attempt, with 100l. for which, as he had not ſuch a ſum immediately about him, he gave a draught on his banker, and waited in *dureſſe*, till the arrival of it releaſed him.

This misfortune made him more cautious for ſome time; but he begins to forget it now, and goes on *with his buſineſs* as before. One thing indeed he takes ſufficient care about, and that is, that the waſte of his breeches is properly ſecured: for ſo ſtrong is the impreſſion, which that accident made upon him, that he never walks a dozen ſteps without pulling them up.

You ſee moſt of them begin to nod, I ſhall therefore draw the curtain here, and leave them to their nap, with this obſervation, that a few ſuch examples, as the laſt

but

but one, and many of the kind there are, particularly eminent in this exalted virtue of charity, in both the ſexes, are ſufficient to take off the prejudice, which the others muſt excite, and to preſerve the proper reſpect, to the principles they propoſe to imitation.

## CHAP. XV.

*Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themſelves. They fall out about the diviſion of the ſpoil. A terrible uproar is appeaſed by a demand of general concern. The conciſe manner of paſſing publick accounts.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

WHEN I had taken a ſufficient view of the governors, I had leiſure to turn my obſervations to the ſervants of the ſociety, whoſe behaviour raiſed an indignation too ſtrong to be expreſſed by words.

If the governors feaſted, they paid for their feaſting; but the ſervants feaſted no leſs, and were paid for it! Nor was this enormity confined to this day: their whole time was one continued ſcene of it, and

much the greater part of the contributions of the public was proſtituted to this abominable abuſe: while the poor, for whoſe relief they were given, too often languiſhed in want of the meaneſt neceſſaries, the fund being inſufficient for their wants, and the luxury and wages of their ſervants.

I was diverted from theſe reflections, by an uproar, in one of the private apartments of the houſe, where ſome of the ſuperiour ſervants, had got together over a bottle of wine, to ſettle their reſpective dividends of the ſubſcriptions of the day. I call them ſervants, for that is the proper appellation of all who ſerve for hire. As I was yet undiſpoſed of to any particular perſon, I had it in my power, as I have told you before, to range through the whole territories of the ſociety, to which I belonged, and therefore flew to ſee, what might be the cauſe of this riot, in ſo improper a place, where I was witneſs to ſuch a ſcene, as almoſt tranſcends belief.

At the upper end of the table ſat *the treaſurer* (for it would be a reproach to the pooreſt ſociety, to have fewer officers than the ſtate) with his accounts before him. After a bumper to the ſucceſs of the charity, 'Mr. ſteward (ſaid he) our ſubſcriptions 'have been ſo good this year, that I think

'we

'we may venture to enlarge our ſallaries,
'a little; for laſt year they were really
'ſcarce worth a gentleman's acceptance.'—
'That is true (replied the ſteward) and
'I believe we may enlarge the houſe-allow-
'ance too, for upon the preſent eſtabliſh-
'ment, it is hardly enough for the days
'we meet here, and will not afford any
'thing to carry home, to entertain a friend
'with, as a gentleman would deſire:—it is
'but ſwelling ſome of the *ſick articles*,
'which at preſent are ſcarce above the con-
'ſumption. When I was overſeer of the
'pariſh, we managed things better. We
'then lived like gentlemen: nay, I remem-
'ber when I was church-warden, that we
'ſpent an whole ſummer, jaunting about
'the country, in purſuit of a gentleman,
'who had a child ſworn to him; for fifty
'ſhillings, which he had beed ordered to
'pay, till the bill of our expences came to
'15 l. and yet no-body could ſay againſt it:
'So that it is our own fault, if we do not
'live well.'

'Right (joined the apothecary) nor was
'the appointment for medicines any way
'ſufficient. Had half what the phyſicians
'preſcribed, been given, there would have
'been nothing to be got by the contract.'—
'How, Mr. apothecary (returned the cook,

'with a ſneer) nothing to be got! pray, was 'not all you got clear gain? I am ſure, 'from the benefit received by the patients, 'there did not appear to have been any 'thing above brickduſt, or powder of rot-'ten-poſt, in any of the ſtuffs they took!'

'Pray S— S— Sir (ſtuttered the apo-'thecary, in a rage) wh—wh— what's that 'you ſay? who m—— m—— made you a 'judge of medicines?'—'Not you, I 'thank God, Sir (ſaid the cook) as my 'health ſhews. But I have good reaſon for 'what I ſay, for though I put double the 'quantity of meat in my broth, I could 'not prevent the people's dying, nor make 'the few, who recovered, able to go out, 'in twice the uſual time.——S—S— Sir, 'tis all a d— d— damn'd lie. Their d-- 'd-- dying was occaſioned by the p— p— 'poorneſs of the b— b— broth, and the 'badneſs of their p— p— p—— proviſions, 'and not by the w—— w— want of medi-'cines; and I'll p— p— prove it, Sir: 'and how you ſup—p—p—ported your 'family on the m— m— meat that ſhould 'have been d— d— dreſs'd for the ſick!'

—'You'll prove it, Sir! Take care that 'you! Gentlemen take notice of what he 'ſays! This is ſtriking at my character; 'and muſt affect my bread.'

'That

'That is true, Mr. cook (ſaid the ſecre-
'tary, who had been an attorney's clerk)
'and whatever ſtrikes at a man's character,
'ſo as to affect his bread, is actionable.'—
'B—b— but Sir, he attacked my cha—
'cha— cha— character firſt, and I'll b—
'b— b— bring my action too.'——'So
'you may, Sir (replied the lawyer) the
'action will lie on both ſides.'——

The diſpute had hitherto been kept up, with ſuch heat, that the company could not interpoſe a word to pacify them, but the mention of the law made it every one's concern in a moment.——'Silence, Gentle-
'men (ſaid the treaſurer, raiſing ſlowly his
'auguſt bulk, and ſtriking his hand upon
'the table) Silence, I ſay, and let me hear
'no more of this brawling. Mr. cook!
'Mr. apothecary! what do you both mean?
'to diſcover the ſecrets of our ſociety, and
'to blow us all up at once? You both heard
'me ſay, that every thing which was wrong
'ſhould be adjuſted! could you not wait
'for that, without falling into this indecent,
'this unprofitable wrangle? As for you,
'Mr. ſecretary, the leven of your profeſ-
'ſion will break out; it is ſufficient to in-
'fect the whole maſs! Is this your pro-
'miſe, your oath? To follow your buſi-
'neſs, and do as you are ordered quietly

'and

'and implicitly, without meddling any farther, or perplexing us with the tricks of your former trade? But it was in vain to expect it. A lawyer can as well live without food, as without fomenting quarrels, and ſetting his neighbours together by the ears: bring an action indeed! and ſo betray our myſtery, to the impertinent remarks of counſellors, and the ſcoffs of templers and attorney's clerks. Let me hear one word more of the kind, and this moment I declare off all connection, and leave every man to ſhift for himſelf. Our general oath of ſecrecy, atteſted under our hands, ſecures me from information, as it would invalidate the teſtimony of us all.'

With theſe words, he turned about, to leave the room, when the ſteward, catching him by the breaſt, pulled him into his chair, and holding him down, *by main force*, addreſſed him thus:——'Good God, Sir! what do you mean! to take notice of the warmth of madmen, who know not what they ſay: you, Mr. Treaſurer, have moved in an higher ſphere of life, and ought to be above ſuch things. *You* were not raiſed from cleaning the ſhoes of a petti-fogging attorney, in whoſe drudgery you loſt your ears!——from being ſcullion in

'a

'a nobleman's kitchen, or ſervant to a 'mountebank, to diſpence his packets to 'the mob; *you* were not raiſed, I ſay, from 'any of theſe ſtations to the rank of a gen-'tleman, by this office, and ſhould be 'above taking offence at the low-liv'd be-'haviour of ſuch creatures, who know no 'better.'——'Nor w— w— w— was I 'a full-handed ten-times b— b— b— 'bankrupt (interrupted the apothecary, as 'he would have done ſooner, had rage left 'him power of utterance) that b— b— 'b— being unable to get credit any l--- l--- 'l--- longer, came from cheating the p-- 'p-- p-- public, to cheating the p-- p-- 'p-- poor! nor a c— c— c— caſt-off, 'worn-out p— p— p— pimping footman, 'whoſe dirty ſervices w— w— w— were 'rewarded with this place.'

This made the madneſs general, and they were juſt going to proceed to blows, when the porter entered haſtily, and told them the committee were adjourned to their chamber, and had ſent for their accounts, to ſit upon them directly.

This brought them all to their ſenſes, and made them friends a moment. 'Gen-'tlemen (ſaid the treaſurer) we have all 'been too hot, all to blame; but let there

'be

'be no more of it! let us agree among 'ourſelves, and we may defy the world.'

Upon this, a general ſhake of the hand put an end to the whole conteſt, and they proceeded to buſineſs, as if no ſuch thing had ever happened, unanimous in their endeavours to cheat the publick, and fatten on the ſpoils of the poor.

By that time the committee had ſmoaked a pipe, and drank their coffee, the accounts were laid before them, over which they nodded a few moments, and then paſſed them, without exception. The next thing was to pay the ſalaries of the officers, in which diſtribution, it fell to my lot to be given to the chaplain.

End of the First Volume.

ca
24.

2 vols
Finch ed
some staining

[Johnston, Charles]

79-68
vol. 1
Falkner
Grierson
28 Aug.

92
ca
20.
D760
J73c
V. 1